ALMA MATER STUDIORUM
UNIVERSITÀ DI BOLOGNA

Department of Physics and Astronomy "A. Righi"

Second cycle degree

Physics

Dissipation of primordial Gravitational Waves and CMB spectral distortions

Supervisor:
Prof. Roberto Balbinot

Co-Supervisor:
Dott. Fabio Finelli

Defended by:
Luca Morelli

Graduation Session
Academic Year 2024/2025

Abstract

[1]

Notations and conventions

Contents

I

The homogeneous universe

Chapter 1

The Friedmann Robertson Walker Universe

Cosmology is based upon two basics principles:

- **the Copernican Principle**, or that all the observers are on equal footing;
- **the Cosmological Principle**, which states that the universe, at the largest scales, is homogeneous and isotropic.

These principles may not seem consistent with physical reality: clearly the core of a star is very different from empty space or even from the interior of planets, but in order to describe the dynamics of the whole universe we need to make some simplifying assumptions. Observations, for example of the distribution of galaxies or of the cosmic microwave background radiation, show that at large scales, on average, the universe looks the same in all directions. The Copernican Principle then implies that all observers should see an isotropic universe, thus we can claim that all points of the universe should also look the same. Again we should stress that these are just assumptions that, at some large scale, we think can become adequate to approximate the description of space, allowing us to reduce significantly the degrees of freedom that we have to study.

1.1 The geometry of the universe

We now have to translate the proprieties of isotropy and homogeneity to the language of General Relativity, namely differential geometry and manifolds.
Notice that the two above principles refer only to the universe, or better, to space at a fixed time, therefore it is space which is really isotropic and homogeneous, while time has no particular symmetries.
Hence, we will assume that space is **maximally symmetric**, which means that it possesses the maximum number of independent Killing vectors. In fact, homogeneity guarantees 3 Killing vectors, associated to the 3 possible space translations, while isotropy guarantees other 3 Killing vectors, associated to the 3 rotations around a point, and the maximum number of independent Killing vectors for a 3D manifold is indeed 6 (this is

proven in Appendix A.1). In the next sections we will study first how to describe a spacetime with the above proprieties, then we will work out the dynamics that the Einstein field equations give to it.

1.1.1 The Friedmann Robertson Walker metric

We will now proceed constructing charts (coordinates) that are the more convenient to describe the assumed geometry. The main goal of this section is to find the most general form of the metric of an isotropic and homogeneous universe.

To start, consider a space-like hypersurface Σ (a volume in this case), which is a slice of the spacetime manifold, corresponding to space (the universe) at a fixed time. On this hypersurface we choose one chart with coordinates $x^\mu = (0, x^1, x^2, x^3)$.
For each point $P \in \Sigma$ we pick a vector $\vec{n}$ that is orthogonal to Σ (it should be orthogonal to each vector of the tangent space, in P, of the submanifold defined by Σ) such that those are normalized to -1 (since they are orthogonal to a space-like hypersurface).
In each point P the following Cauchy problem defines a unique geodesic for which $\vec{n}$ is the tangent vector,

$$\begin{cases} \left(\nabla_{\vec{n}}\vec{n}\right)^\mu = \frac{d^2x^\mu}{dt^2} + \Gamma^\mu_{\nu\lambda}\frac{dx^\nu}{dt}\frac{dx^\lambda}{dt} = 0, \\ \frac{dx^\mu}{dt}\Big|_P = n^\mu\Big|_P, \\ x^\mu(0) = x^\mu\Big|_P. \end{cases} \tag{1.1}$$

We can extend our initial chart, in a neighborhood of Σ, assigning to each point Q the coordinates $x^\mu = (t, x^1, x^2, x^3)$, where t is the value in Q of the geodesic parameter and $(0, x^1, x^2, x^3)$ are the coordinates of the point P, from which the geodesic starts. These coordinates will eventually fail once some geodesics, from our construction, will meet and intersect.

We now want to describe the metric of our spacetime manifold using one of these charts. To do so we will take the chart induced basis of each tangent space $(\partial_t, \partial_1, \partial_2, \partial_3)$ and then label them:

$$\partial_t = \vec{n}, \qquad \partial_i = \vec{Y}_{(i)},$$

where ∂_t is by construction the normal vector field we have defined, since $\vec{n}$ is tangent to each geodesic by (1.1) and then is parallel transported along them.
Using this basis, the first component of the metric reads, by our initial construction and because scalar products of parallel transported vectors is preserved by metric connection,

$$g_{tt} = g(\partial_t, \partial_t) = n^\mu n_\mu = -1.$$

On Σ, from our construction hypothesis $\vec{n} \perp \Sigma$, the time-spacial mixed components read

$$g_{ti} = g(\partial_t, \partial_i) = n_\mu Y^\mu_{(i)} = 0.$$

We can prove that this holds also outside Σ by evaluating its covariant derivative along one of the geodesics we constructed

$$
\begin{aligned}
n^\nu \nabla_\nu \left(n_\mu Y^\mu_{(i)} \right) &= n^\nu n_\mu \nabla_\nu Y^\mu_{(i)} + \cancel{Y^\mu_{(i)} n^\nu \nabla_\nu n_\mu} \\
&= Y^\nu_{(i)} n_\mu \nabla_\nu n^\mu \\
&= \frac{1}{2} \left(Y^\nu_{(i)} n_\mu \nabla_\nu n^\mu + Y^\nu_{(i)} n_\mu \nabla_\nu \left(g^{\mu\lambda} n_\lambda \right) \right) \\
&= \frac{1}{2} \left(Y^\nu_{(i)} n_\mu \nabla_\nu n^\mu + \cancel{Y^\nu_{(i)} n_\mu \nabla_\nu \left(g^{\mu\lambda} \right)} n_\lambda + Y^\nu_{(i)} n_\mu g^{\mu\lambda} \nabla_\nu n_\lambda \right) \\
&= \frac{1}{2} \left(Y^\nu_{(i)} n_\mu \nabla_\nu n^\mu + Y^\nu_{(i)} n^\lambda \nabla_\nu n_\lambda \right) \\
&= \frac{1}{2} Y^\nu_{(i)} \nabla_\nu \left(n^\lambda n_\lambda \right) = 0,
\end{aligned}
$$

in which we used (in order): the geodesic equation $n^\nu \nabla_\nu (n_\mu) = 0$, that coordinates vectors commute, so that $[\vec{n}, \vec{Y}_{(i)}]^\mu = n^\nu \nabla_\nu (Y^\mu_{(i)}) - Y^\nu_{(i)} \nabla_\nu (n^\mu) = 0$[1], the metric connection condition $\nabla g = 0$, and last that, being $n^\mu n_\mu = -1$, its derivative vanishes.
Summing up the above results, we can write the metric as

$$ds^2 = -dt^2 + g_{ij} dx^i dx^j.$$

In this expression the absence of the mixed terms $dt\, dx^i$ reflects that there exist a family of hypersurfaces, defined by $t = \text{const}$, that are all orthogonal to the vector field $\vec{n}$. These represent the evolved universe at different times.
At this stage, the spatial components of the metric can depend on all the coordinates of the chart we have introduced. If we consider how time evolution could affect the spatial terms we can deduce that all the components g_{ij} should scale in the same way, otherwise we could have different scaling in different directions, which goes against the assumption of isotropy. We will write explicitly the time dependence as

$$ds^2 = -dt^2 + a^2(t) g_{ij} dx^i dx^j.$$

Let's now take into account that each space hypersurface is a maximally symmetric submanifold. As showed in Appendix A.1, maximally symmetric manifolds have the peculiar propriety that, due to their high number of symmetries, the Riemann tensor reduces (in 3 dimensions) to

$${}^{(3)}R_{ijkl} = \frac{{}^{(3)}R}{6} (g_{ik} g_{jl} - g_{il} g_{jk}),$$

in which the ${}^{(3)}$ is used to signal that these are tensors referred to the submanifold Σ and ${}^{(3)}R$ is their Ricci scalar. The Ricci tensor thus reads:

$${}^{(3)}R_{ij} = \frac{{}^{(3)}R}{6} (3 g_{ij} - g^{lk} g_{il} g_{jk}) = \frac{{}^{(3)}R}{3} g_{ij}. \tag{1.2}$$

With this relation we can further to determine the metric without using the Einstein field equations yet. To simplify the metric, we can note that, being maximally symmetric, each space submanifold will also have spherical symmetry. This allows us to write the metric in spherical coordinates as

$$ds^2 = -dt^2 + a(t)^2 \left[e^{2\beta(r)} dr^2 + e^{2\gamma(r)} r^2 (d\theta^2 + \sin^2\theta\, d\phi^2) \right],$$

[1]The Christoffel symbols cancel out, due to symmetric connection, leaving only partial derivatives.

where $\beta(r)$, $\gamma(r)$ are some unknown functions that depend only on the radial coordinate due to spherical symmetry. Note that we exploited the exponential in order to preserve the signature. Lastly, the angular part, $d\Omega^2 = d\theta^2 + \sin\theta \; d\phi^2$, must scales with an overall factor $e^{2\gamma}$, in order to maintain sphere to be perfectly round.
We can simplify this metric even more by scaling the radial coordinate

$$r \to e^{-\gamma(r)} r, \qquad dr \to \left(1 - r\frac{d\gamma}{dr}\right) e^{-\gamma(r)} dr,$$

in this way the metric becomes

$$ds^2 = -dt^2 + a^2(t)\left[\left(1 - r\frac{d\gamma}{dr}\right)^2 e^{2(\beta(r)-\gamma(r))} dr^2 + r^2(d\theta^2 + \sin^2\theta \; d\phi^2)\right].$$

Since g_{rr} must always be non-negative, we can define a function $\alpha(r)$, such that $e^{2\alpha} = \left(1 - r\frac{d\gamma}{dr}\right)^2 e^{2(\beta(r)-\gamma(r))}$, so that the metric reads

$$ds^2 = -dt^2 + a^2(t)\left[e^{2\alpha(r)} dr^2 + r^2(d\theta^2 + \sin^2\theta \; d\phi^2)\right].$$

Now, we can evaluate the Christoffel symbols of the metric restricted to the universe submanifold (because with this construction the time component has no dynamics):

$$\begin{aligned} &{}^{(3)}\Gamma^r_{rr} = \frac{d\alpha}{dr}, \qquad {}^{(3)}\Gamma^\theta_{r\theta} = \frac{1}{r}, \qquad {}^{(3)}\Gamma^r_{\theta\theta} = -re^{-2\alpha}, \qquad {}^{(3)}\Gamma^r_{rr} = \frac{\cos\theta}{\sin\theta}, \\ &{}^{(3)}\Gamma^\phi_{r\phi} = \frac{1}{r}, \qquad {}^{(3)}\Gamma^r_{\phi\phi} = -re^{-2\alpha}\sin^2\theta, \qquad {}^{(3)}\Gamma^\theta_{\phi\phi} = -\sin\theta\cos\theta, \end{aligned} \tag{1.3}$$

all the others are zero or deducible from the symmetries of the above.
We then obtain the non-vanishing components of the Riemann tensor are:

$$\begin{aligned} {}^{(3)}R^r_{\theta r\theta} &= re^{-2\alpha}\frac{d\alpha}{dr}, \\ {}^{(3)}R^r_{\phi r\phi} &= re^{-2\alpha}\sin^2\theta\frac{d\alpha}{dr}, \\ {}^{(3)}R^\theta_{\phi\theta\phi} &= (1 - e^{-2\alpha})\sin^2\theta. \end{aligned} \tag{1.4}$$

Lastly, we can get the Ricci tensor:

$${}^{(3)}R_{rr} = \frac{2}{r}\frac{d\alpha}{dr}, \qquad {}^{(3)}R_{\theta\theta} = e^{-2\alpha}\left[r\frac{d\alpha}{dr} - 1\right] + 1, \qquad {}^{(3)}R_{\phi\phi} = \sin^2\theta R_{\theta\theta}. \tag{1.5}$$

Combining the expression for the Ricci tensor (1.2) and the one above (1.5), we end up with two differential equations that can be solved to determine the metric

$$\begin{aligned} {}^{(3)}R_{rr} &= \frac{{}^{(3)}R}{3} g_{tt} \quad \Rightarrow \quad \boxed{\frac{2}{r}\frac{d\alpha}{dr} = \frac{{}^{(3)}R}{3} e^{2\alpha}} \\ {}^{(3)}R_{ij} &= \frac{{}^{(3)}R}{3} g_{ij} \quad \Rightarrow \quad \boxed{e^{-2\alpha}\left[r\frac{d\alpha}{dr} - 1\right] + 1 = \frac{{}^{(3)}R}{3} r^2}. \end{aligned}$$

Since we have two equations for one unknown, substituting the first equation into the second one, we can obtain an initial condition for the former

$$\frac{d\alpha}{dr} = \frac{{}^{(3)}R}{6} re^{2\alpha}, \qquad e^{-2\alpha}\left[\frac{{}^{(3)}R}{6} r^2 e^{2\alpha} - 1\right] + 1 = \frac{{}^{(3)}R}{3} r^2.$$

To solve this differential equation we start by defining $k \overset{\text{def}(3)}{=} R/6$, and then we integrate

$$\int e^{-2\alpha}\, d\alpha = \int kr\, dr \quad \Rightarrow \quad e^{-2\alpha} = -kr^2 + C,$$

then, to determine C we plug this solution into the initial condition

$$\begin{aligned} 2kr^2 &= e^{-2\alpha}\left[kr^2 e^{2\alpha} - 1\right] + 1 = kr^2 - e^{-2\alpha} + 1 \\ &= kr^2 + kr^2 - C + 1 = 2kr^2 - C + 1, \quad \Rightarrow \quad \boxed{C = 1}. \end{aligned}$$

In this way we have obtained the **Friedmann Robertson Walker metric** (FRW metric)

$$ds^2 = -dt^2 + a^2(t)\left[\frac{dr^2}{1 - kr^2} + r^2(d\theta^2 + \sin^2\theta\, d\phi^2)\right], \tag{1.6}$$

notice that to obtain this metric we never used the Einstein field equation but only geometrical proprieties of spacetime, deduced from the cosmological principle, therefore this metric is totally generic once we assume such principle.
The coordinates (t, r, θ, ϕ) are called **comoving coordinates**, since these precise choice makes manifest the isotropy and homogeneity of the universe, that wouldn't be manifest in a moving reference frame with respect to the universe content. Two parameters appear in this metric: $a(t)$, the **cosmic scale factor**, which measure how distances, since it multiplies the spatial part of the metric, change with time, and k, the **curvature constant**, that is proportional to the Ricci scalar of each universe submanifold and thus measures the curvature of space.
These parameters can be rescaled as follows, without affecting the metric (1.6),

$$r \to \lambda r, \qquad a \to \lambda^{-1} a, \qquad k \to \lambda^{-2} k,$$

this allows to give dimensions of a length arbitrarily to r or to a.

We will now give some interpretation to the curvature constant that appears in the Friedmann Robertson Walker metric (1.6). First, it is useful to use the scale invariance of the metric to reduce the possible values of this parameter so that it is just its sign to determine the curvature. Rescaling as follows

$$r \to \sqrt{|k|}\, r, \qquad a \to \frac{a}{\sqrt{|k|}}, \qquad k \to \frac{k}{|k|},$$

k can now only assume the following values $\{-1, 0, +1\}$.
Let's now discuss the geometry associated to each value of k, we will focus just on the spatial metric $d\sigma^2 = \frac{dr^2}{1-kr^2} + r^2(d\theta^2 + \sin^2\theta\, d\phi^2)$.

- **Flat universe**, for $k = 0$, the metric reduces to usual metric of $\mathbb{R}^3$ in spherical coordinates

  $$d\sigma^2 = dr^2 + r^2(d\theta^2 + \sin^2\theta\, d\phi^2)$$

  which correspond to a flat universe.

- **Closed universe**, for $k = +1$, the metric can be reduced to a more familiar one introducing

$$d\chi = \frac{dr}{\sqrt{1-r^2}} \qquad \Rightarrow \qquad r = \sin\chi,$$
$$d\sigma^2 = d\chi^2 + \sin^2\chi(d\theta^2 + \sin^2\theta\ d\phi^2),$$

  which makes manifest that the radial coordinate is bounded[2] ($r \in [0, +1]$) and the metric is the one of a 3-dimensional sphere.

- **Open universe**, for $k = -1$, the metric can be better understood by introducing

$$d\chi = \frac{dr}{\sqrt{1+r^2}} \qquad \Rightarrow \qquad r = \sinh\chi,$$
$$d\sigma^2 = d\chi^2 + \sinh^2\chi(d\theta^2 + \sin^2\theta\ d\phi^2),$$

  which shows that r is not bounded, and the metric takes the form of the one of a 3-dimensional hyperboloid.

The value of k will be determined by the energy content of the universe, through the Einstein field equations.

Since in the following sections we will need the metric connection and the Ricci tensor, we are going just to calculate them now.
The Christoffel symbols of the Robertson Walker metric (1.6) are

$$\begin{aligned}
\Gamma^0_{11} &= \frac{a\dot{a}}{1-kr^2}, & \Gamma^1_{11} &= \frac{kr}{1-kr^2}, \\
\Gamma^0_{22} &= a\dot{a}r^2, & \Gamma^0_{33} &= a\dot{a}r^2\sin^2\theta, \\
\Gamma^1_{01} = \Gamma^2_{02} = \Gamma^3_{03} &= \frac{\dot{a}}{a}, & \Gamma^1_{22} &= -r(1-kr^2), \\
\Gamma^1_{33} &= -r(1-kr^2)\sin^2\theta, & \Gamma^2_{12} = \Gamma^3_{13} &= \frac{1}{r}, \\
\Gamma^2_{33} &= -\sin\theta\cos\theta, & \Gamma^2_{23} &= \cot\theta,
\end{aligned} \tag{1.7}$$

the ones that are not listed are zero or obtainable from the symmetry of the connection.
From the above Christoffel symbols, the non-zero components of the Ricci tensor are

$$\begin{aligned}
R_{00} &= -3\frac{\ddot{a}}{a}, \\
R_{11} &= \frac{a\ddot{a} - 2\dot{a} + 2k}{1-kr^2}, \\
R_{22} &= r^2(a\ddot{a} - 2\dot{a} + 2k), \\
R_{33} &= r^2(a\ddot{a} - 2\dot{a} + 2k)\sin^2\theta.
\end{aligned} \tag{1.8}$$

1.1.2 Dynamical effects in the Robertson Walker universe

With the Robertson Walker metric (1.6) in our hand it is time to study the consequences of having allowed spacetime to have a dynamics. In this section we will work with an arbitrary cosmic factor, however we will also use as reference our universe in which we observe an expansion described by an increasing $a(t)$. Keep in mind that, from now on, we will use the convention that at $t = t_{\text{today}}$ the cosmic scale factor is unitary.

[2] This behavior is signaled by the fact that in the previous chart the metric was singular for $r = 1$.

Hubble Law

Let's start by evaluating the distance between two points: FRW metric gives

$$d(t) = a(t) \int_{r_1}^{r_2} \frac{dr}{\sqrt{1-kr^2}}.$$

Notice that the above implies that distances can now change overtime: in the case of our universe they increase resulting in the expansion of the universe. This suggests that the comoving coordinates are not really physical, since they represent fixed points that appear to be moving. We thus define the **physical coordinates** by multiplying the comoving ones by the cosmic scale factor, this allows to describe a non-zero physical velocity for an object at fixed comoving coordinates

$$\mathbf{x}_{\text{phy}} \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} a(t)\mathbf{x} \quad \Rightarrow \quad \mathbf{v}_{\text{phy}} \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \dot{\mathbf{x}}_{\text{phy}} = \frac{\dot{a}}{a}\mathbf{x} + a(t)\mathbf{v}.$$

This is exactly what Hubble in 1929 [13] observed by studying the motion of far galaxies: a linear relation between observed velocities and the distance between us and these galaxies. The factor of proportionality is nowadays measured to be $(\dot{a}/a)(t_0) = H_0 \approx 70$ km s^{-1} Mpc^{-1} and it is called **Hubble parameter**, this tells us that for each Megaparsec of distance an object appears to be moving with a physical velocity of 70 km/s, due to the expansion of the universe. Indeed, by assuming a negligible peculiar velocity of the observed galaxy (typically hundreds of km/s) the physical velocity reads

$$\mathbf{v}_{\text{phy}} = H_0\mathbf{x} \tag{1.9}$$

which is called the **Hubble law**. Note that there is no obstacle for the physical velocity of a far enough object to exceed the speed of light: however this does not contradict special relativity since this is an effect that arises in our reference frame which is only locally inertial. For two objects at the same arbitrary distance from us, their relative velocity will always be less than the speed of light.

Cosmological redshift

All our observations, from astronomical objects, come in the form of light or, more recently, gravitational waves. This means that the notion of physical distances and velocities could not be enough to describe all the effects that could affect our observations. Knowing how the motion on *null geodesics* occurs is also needed. The FRW metric gives

$$dt = \pm a(t)\frac{dr}{\sqrt{1-kr^2}}$$

that allows for the comoving distance between two objects to be related to the time needed by light to travel from one to the other. Now, suppose that a far object emits a periodic pulse of light each δt_{em} seconds and let's allow for an arbitrary time between consecutive observations δt_{obs} on the Earth. The above relation allows us to find the latter from the former. Indeed, if at some time t_0 a first signal is emitted and then received by us at some time t_1, so that[3]

$$\int_{t_1}^{t_0} \frac{dt}{a(t)} = \int_0^{r_1} \frac{dr}{\sqrt{1-kr^2}},$$

[3] We used the $-$ sign since the motion occurs from the galaxy to us at the center of the reference frame.

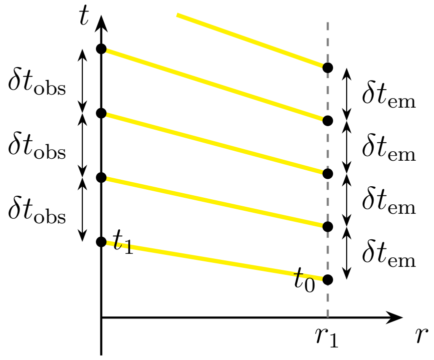


Figure 1.1: Graphical depiction of the emission and observation of light pulses in FRW spacetime. Time intervals are not in scale.

then a second pulse of light would be emitted at $t_0 + \delta t_{\rm em}$ and received at $t_1 + \delta t_{\rm obs}$ (Fig. 1.1), hence giving

$$\int_{t_1+\delta t_{\rm obs}}^{t_0+\delta t_{\rm em}} \frac{dt}{a(t)} = \int_0^{r_1} \frac{dr}{\sqrt{1-kr^2}}.$$

Note that in both the above expressions the right-hand side is time independent and determined only by the comoving coordinates of the emitting and receiving objects. Equating the above and by splitting the second integral, we get

$$\int_{t_0}^{t_1} \frac{dt}{a(t)} = \int_{t_0+\delta t_{\rm obs}}^{t_1+\delta t_{\rm em}} \frac{dt}{a(t)} = \int_{t_0+\delta t_{\rm em}}^{t_0} \frac{dt}{a(t)} + \int_{t_0}^{t_1} \frac{dt}{a(t)} + \int_{t_1}^{t_1+\delta t_{\rm obs}} \frac{dt}{a(t)}$$

that, by assuming $\delta t_{\rm em}$ and $\delta t_{\rm obs}$ to be small (so that the remaining integral can be approximated by the integrand times δt) we find:

$$\frac{\delta t_{\rm em}}{\delta t_{\rm obs}} = \frac{a(t_{\rm em})}{a(t_{\rm obs})}. \tag{1.10}$$

This means that, as the universe expands, $a(t)$ increases and the elapsed time between consecutive observations becomes greater than the time between emissions.

This may seem a less important effect, however, when considering the wave nature of light, what we call **redshift** arises and becomes an essential tool for our observations. Consider δt as the period related to a specific wave of light (or a gravitational wave since both move on null geodesics), this time is proportional to its wavelength ($\lambda = c\delta t$): ultimately this means that the effect described above results in a difference between the emitted wavelength and the observed one.
Redshift of far objects is measured by the **redshift parameter** as

$$z \stackrel{\rm def}{=} \frac{\lambda_{\rm obs} - \lambda_{\rm em}}{\lambda_{\rm em}} = \frac{1 - a(t_{\rm em})}{a(t_{\rm em})} \quad \Rightarrow \quad 1 + z = \frac{1}{a(t_{\rm em})}, \tag{1.11}$$

where we used that $\lambda(t) \propto a(t)$ and the convention $a(t_{\rm obs}) = 1$. This shows that as the universe expands the light that comes from far objects is shifted, in its spectrum, towards red wavelengths. Further they are, more time for light is needed to reach us and $t_{\rm em}$ gets pushed away from today increasing the observed redshift. This connection allows us referring to time in terms of redshifts: today corresponds to $z = 0$, $z = 1$ corresponds to when the universe was half its current size and as z increases we go back in time.

Lastly, let us mention how redshift is measured. This is accomplished by studying the spectrum of observed galaxies: for each object we can predict its absorption lines (by knowing its chemical composition) that for far objects appear all *"redshifted"* in the same way. By comparison with the spectrum of the same gasses on the Earth we obtain z.

1.2 The Friedmann equations

We now want to determine the dynamics of the parameters appearing in the Friedmann Robertson Walker (1.6) metric knowing the energy content of the universe. The connection between the metric and the energy is given by the *Einstein field equations*

$$R_{\mu\nu} - \frac{1}{2} R g_{\mu\nu} = 8\pi G T_{\mu\nu}, \tag{1.12}$$

where it appears the energy-momentum tensor $T^{\mu\nu}$. To solve this equation a specific energy momentum tensor must be chosen, thus a specific model of the universe content.

1.2.1 Cosmic fluids

The simplest model for the content of the universe is a *perfect fluid* of energy and matter. A perfect fluid, in general, is described by an energy-momentum tensor given by

$$T^{\mu\nu} = (\rho + p) U^\mu U^\nu + p g^{\mu\nu}, \tag{1.13}$$

where ρ is the energy density of the fluid, p the pressure and U^μ the 4-velocity of associated to the bulk motion of the fluid.
When we described the coordinates appearing in the FRW metric, we anticipated that those were comoving coordinates with respect to the content of the universe (so that in that reference frame the metric would be manifestly isotropic and homogeneous). In the reference frame associated to those coordinates, the fluid is at rest[4], thus its energy-momentum tensor takes the form

$$U^\mu = (1, 0, 0, 0), \quad \Rightarrow \quad T_{\mu\nu} = \begin{pmatrix} \rho & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & & & \\ 0 & & g_{ij} p & \\ 0 & & & \end{pmatrix}, \quad T^\mu{}_\nu = \mathrm{diag}(-\rho, p, p, p) \tag{1.14}$$

Even before plugging everything in the Einstein equations, we can study the energy conservation of this fluid, which reads

$$\begin{aligned} 0 = \nabla_\mu T^\mu{}_0 &= \partial_\mu T^\mu{}_0 + \Gamma^\mu_{\mu\lambda} T^\lambda{}_0 - \Gamma^\lambda_{\mu 0} T^\mu{}_\lambda = \partial_0 T^0{}_0 + \Gamma^\mu_{\mu 0} T^0{}_0 - \Gamma^\lambda_{\mu 0} T^\mu{}_\lambda \\ &= -\dot{\rho} - 3\frac{\dot{a}}{a}\rho - 3\frac{\dot{a}}{a} p = -\dot{\rho} - 3\frac{\dot{a}}{a}(\rho + p), \end{aligned} \tag{1.15}$$

where we used that $T^\mu{}_\nu$ is diagonal, and the Christoffel symbols (1.7).
For simple fluids, it is usually assumed that they follow some simple equation of state, as

$$p = \omega\rho, \qquad \omega = \text{constant}. \tag{1.16}$$

[4]Note that the fluid must be at rest to satisfy the cosmological principle, its single particles can move randomly without spoiling isotropy and homogeneity microscopically.

Inserting this into the conservation of energy equation (1.15) we find

$$\frac{\dot{\rho}}{\rho} = -3(1+\omega)\frac{\dot{a}}{a},$$

that can be solved to obtain how the energy density of the fluid scales as the universe expands:

$$\int \frac{d\rho}{\rho} = -3(1+\omega)\int \frac{da}{a} \quad \Rightarrow \quad \boxed{\rho = \rho_0 a^{-3(1+\omega)}}.$$

To better grasp the physics of our construction let's study some simple cases.

- **Dust**: this kind of fluid is defined as a set of collisionless, non-relativistic particles, that therefore will have zero pressure:

  $$p_d = \omega_d \rho_d = 0, \quad \Rightarrow \quad \omega_d = 0 \quad \Rightarrow \quad \rho_d = \frac{E}{V} = \rho_0 a^{-3}.$$

  We can appreciate how, for dust, the energy density scales with the volume ($V \propto a^3$), keeping constant the total energy. This sort of fluid can be used to model groups of stars and galaxies or in general cold matter, for which the pressure is negligible, compared to the energy density.

- **Radiation**: in this case we want to describe massless particles or ultra-relativistic ones, which can be approximated to be massless. We can obtain an equation of state for this fluid by first observing that the $T^{\mu\nu}$ is traceless for E-M fields

  $$T^{\mu}{}_{\mu} = F^{\mu\lambda}F_{\mu\lambda} - \frac{1}{4}g^{\mu}{}_{\mu}F^{\lambda\sigma}F_{\lambda\sigma} = 0,$$

  at the same time equation (1.14) gives that

  $$T^{\mu}{}_{\mu} = -\rho + 3P, \quad \Rightarrow \quad P_r = \frac{1}{3}\rho_r,$$

  which implies $\omega_r = \frac{1}{3}$. Therefore, the energy density of radiation scales as

  $$\rho_r = \rho_0 a^{-4},$$

  that means that for radiation the total energy is not conserved. We interpret this as the fact that, while the universe expands, radiation gets redshifted.

- **Vacuum or dark energy**: this last type of cosmic fluid is quite a strange one, the equation of state for this fluid is

  $$p_v = -\rho_v, \quad \Rightarrow \quad \omega_v = -1.$$

  This means that the energy density, as well as the pressure, as the universe expands, remains constant. Sometimes this is not considered a content of the universe, and it is referred as the *cosmological constant* Λ:

  $$\rho_v = \frac{\Lambda}{8\pi G}.$$

1.2.2 The Friedmann equations

Now that we know how to model the content of the universe, we can proceed to derive the equations governing the time evolution of spacetime. First we want to modify a bit Einstein equations (1.12): from the trace of both sides we get

$$R - \frac{4}{2}R = 8\pi GT \quad \Rightarrow \quad R = -8\pi GT,$$

where $T = T^{\mu}{}_{\mu}$, plugging this result in the field equations (1.12), we can rewrite them as:

$$R_{\mu\nu} = 8\pi G\Big(T_{\mu\nu} - \frac{1}{2}Tg_{\mu\nu}\Big).$$

From the Ricci tensor components of the FRW metric (1.8) and the energy momentum tensor (1.14) we can obtain two equations:

- the $\mu\nu = 00$ component leads to

$$\begin{aligned} -3\frac{\ddot{a}}{a} &= 8\pi G\Big[-\rho - \frac{1}{2}(-\rho + 3p)\Big] \\ &= 4\pi G(\rho + 3p); \end{aligned}$$

- the $\mu\nu = ij$ components lead to

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{a\ddot{a} + 2\dot{a}^2 + 2k}{a^2}g_{ij} &= 8\pi G\Big[pg_{ij} - \frac{1}{2}g_{ij}(-\rho + 3p)\Big] \\ &= 4\pi G(\rho - p)g_{ij}. \end{aligned}$$

Substituting the former into the latter we find

$$\begin{aligned} -\frac{4}{3}\pi G(\rho + 3p) + \frac{2\dot{a}^2 + 2k}{a^2} &= 4\pi G(\rho - p) \\ \frac{2\dot{a}^2 + 2k}{a^2} &= 4\pi G\frac{4}{3}\rho \quad \Rightarrow \quad \boxed{\Big(\frac{\dot{a}}{a}\Big)^2 = \frac{8\pi G}{3}\rho - \frac{k}{a^2}}, \end{aligned} \tag{1.17}$$

which is the **first Friedmann equation**. From the 00 component alone we get the **second Friedmann equation**

$$\boxed{\frac{\ddot{a}}{a} = -\frac{4\pi G}{3}(\rho + 3p)}. \tag{1.18}$$

The first, which is the one that is usually referred as the Friedmann equation, will determine the time evolution of the scale factor $a(t)$. Note that again we have more equation of motion than the number of degrees of freedom that we have to solve for: this is something that we must expect from a constrained system as general relativity. Indeed, equation (1.17) is just a constraint on the scale factor. However, it is well known from the theory of constrained Hamiltonian systems, that the constraint itself can be used to determine the dynamics of the system without employing the equation of motion. Using the first Friedman equation has the advantage of being a first order differential equation and that only the energy density has to be used. As we are going to see, solutions to this equation will depend on the explicit for of the energy density ρ as a function of the scale factor, which we already determined in the case of single-component fluids in the previous section.

Usually, the first Friedmann equation (1.17) is expressed in terms of specific cosmological parameters that are closer to observations:

- the **Hubble parameter**, $H \overset{\text{def}}{=} \frac{\dot{a}}{a}$, which measure the rate of expansion,
- the **critical density**, $\rho_{\text{crit}} \overset{\text{def}}{=} \frac{3H^2}{8\pi G}$, which is the energy denisty of a flat universe,
- the **density parameter**, $\Omega = \frac{8\pi G}{3H^2}\rho \overset{\text{def}}{=} \frac{\rho}{\rho_{\text{crit}}}$,
- the **curvature parameter**, $\Omega_k \overset{\text{def}}{=} \frac{k}{(aH)^2}$.

In this way, equation (1.17) explicitly relates the matter content of the universe with its geometry (flat. open or closed). Indeed, inserting the above parameters in (1.17) it reads

$$\boxed{\Omega - 1 = \Omega_k = \frac{k}{H^2 a^2}}, \tag{1.19}$$

from which we can distinguish 3 distinct cases:

- $\rho < \rho_{\text{crit}} \quad \Leftrightarrow \quad \Omega < 1 \quad \Leftrightarrow \quad k < 0 \quad \Leftrightarrow$ *open universe*,
- $\rho = \rho_{\text{crit}} \quad \Leftrightarrow \quad \Omega = 1 \quad \Leftrightarrow \quad k = 0 \quad \Leftrightarrow$ *flat universe*,
- $\rho > \rho_{\text{crit}} \quad \Leftrightarrow \quad \Omega > 1 \quad \Leftrightarrow \quad k > 0 \quad \Leftrightarrow$ *closed universe*.

As we will see, observations suggest that now, for our universe, $\Omega_k \approx 0$. Therefore, we will always consider flat geometry, in this case the dynamics of the universe is determined by

$$\left(\frac{\dot{a}}{a}\right)^2 = \frac{8\pi G}{3}\rho.$$

In general all fluids will make up the total energy density of the universe, however solving for the exact dynamics in this case becomes almost impossible. We therefore resort to the approximation of a universe filled by a single fluid, which in reality is the dominant one (its energy density) at a given time. In this way we recognize three main cases.

- **Matter dominated universe**: in this case, the universe is approximated to contain only dust, therefore $\rho = \rho_0 a^{-3}$. Plugging this energy density into the above differential equation we get

  $$\dot{a} = H_0 a^{-\frac{1}{2}} \quad \Rightarrow \quad a(t) = \left(\frac{3}{2}H_0 t\right)^{2/3},$$

  where $H_0 = H(t_0) = \sqrt{\frac{8\pi G}{3}\rho_0}$ and we imposed $a(0) = 0$.
  This kind of universe is expanding but at a slower and slower rate ($\ddot{a} \leq 0$).

- **Radiation dominated universe**: assuming that the universe is approximately filled only by radiation, therefore $\rho = \rho_0 a^{-4}$, the above differential equation now reads
$$\dot{a} = H_0 a^{-1} \quad \Rightarrow \quad a(t) = \sqrt{2H_0 t},$$
where again $H_0 = H(t_0) = \sqrt{\frac{8\pi G}{3}}$ and $a(0) = 0$.
Again, this universe is expanding at a slower and slower rate ($\ddot{a} \leq 0$).

- **Empty universe**: lastly we consider an empty universe or in which vacuum energy dominates, therefore $\rho = \frac{\Lambda}{8\pi G}$, from which we get
$$\dot{a} = a\sqrt{\frac{\Lambda}{3}} \quad \Rightarrow \quad a(t) = a_0 e^{\sqrt{\frac{\Lambda}{3}}(t-t_0)},$$
in which this time we imposed $a(t_0) = a_0$.
Note that, among the cases, this universe is the only one that has an accelerating expansion ($\ddot{a} \geq 0$). It is worth noting also that the first two cases admit a finite time (in our calculations $t = 0$) for which the universe has no spatial extension ($a(0) = 0$). The empty universe does not admit it for any finite time.

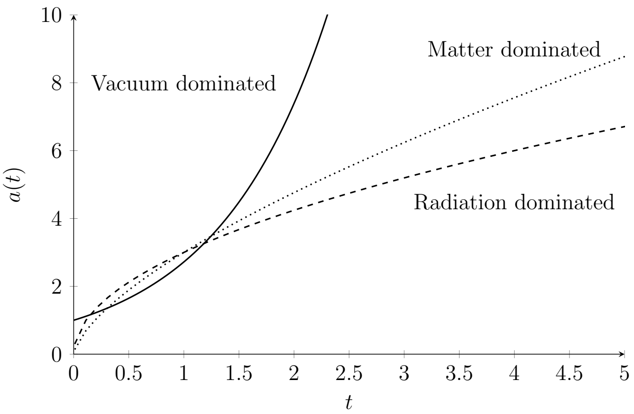


Figure 1.2: Comparison of the time evolution of the scale factor with the three different fluids in a flat universe. Only the vacuum dominated universe (solid line) displays an accelerating expansion. Arbitrary units are used in this plot.

1.2.3 The ΛCDM model

With all the previous tools we introduced we are finally ready to describe the universe that we live in and its evolution. To draw the timeline of our universe we must start from today, from current observations of the cosmological parameters, and then trace back its history.

The first cosmological parameter that has been ever observed is the Hubble parameter, by Hubble himself. Current and more precise measurements of this parameter give

$$H_0 = (67.74 \pm 0.46)\text{km s}^{-1}\text{Mpc}^{-1}$$

which correspond to a critical density $\rho_{\text{crit},0} = (8.62 \pm 0.12) \times 10^{-27}\text{kg m}^{-3}$.

Nowadays, most of our knowledge on the cosmological universe comes from measures of the *CMB*, or the *Cosmic microwave background radiation*, which for now is just the relic of the photons that filled the universe at earlier times. In 1996, the *COBE* satellite [11] measured the spectrum of the CMB that turned out to be an almost perfect blackbody radiation at the temperature

$$T_0 = (2.7255 \pm 0.0006)K, \tag{1.20}$$

this allows to estimate the number density and the energy density of these relic photons (section 2.1.2) that read

$$n_{\gamma,0} \approx 410 \text{ photons cm}^{-3}, \quad \rho_{\gamma,0} \approx 4.6 \times 10^{34}\text{g cm}^{-3}, \quad \Omega_{\gamma,0} = (5.38 \pm 0.15) \times 10^{-5}.$$

This turns out to be the main contribution to all the photon contained in the universe. By the results of COBE, we also discovered that the CMB displays small temperature fluctuations $\Delta T/T \approx 10^{-5}$ that, we will see, give us a tremendous amount of data about the history of the universe. For now, it is important that these measures suggest an upper bound for the spatial curvature of our universe today

$$|\Omega_{k,0}| < 0.005. \tag{1.21}$$

This shows that today only a small fraction of all the contribution to the Friedmann equation (1.19) is represented by curvature and therefore we consider our universe almost flat.

Together with photons, our universe is also filled by neutrinos that, being really light particles, behave almost as radiation (their speed is really close to c) and therefore they contribute to the total radiation density[5]

$$\Omega_{r,0} = (9.02 \pm 0.21) \times 10^{-5}.$$

Clearly, also the ordinary matter of which we are made of (what we called dust that mainly is stars and gasses that fill the universe) must be taken into account: current measures from the CMB and the abundances of the lightest chemical elements in our universe show

$$\Omega_{b,0} = 0.0493 \pm 0.0006,$$

where the subscript b stands for baryons, which are the main ingredients of ordinary matter particles. From this data we can estimate the corresponding number density: assuming that the main contribute to ordinary matter is represented by protons (since they are more massive than electrons and the most abundant gas is hydrogen) we find

$$n_{n,0} \approx \frac{\rho_{m_0}}{m_p} = \frac{\Omega_{b,0}\rho_{\text{crit},0}}{m_p} \approx 0.3 \times 10^{-6}\text{cm}^{-3}.$$

Comparing this to the density of photons we note that the latter is much higher, with a baryon-to-photon ratio

$$\eta_{b\gamma} \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} n_b/n_\gamma \approx 6 \times 10^{-10}. \tag{1.22}$$

Modern astrophysics hints that a further component must be accounted: **Dark matter** which is observed through the dynamics of galaxies or by other gravitational effect

[5] In this context radiation means that we describe this fraction of energy as a perfect fluid with $\omega = 1/3$.

Parameter	Meaning	Value
H_0	expansion rate	67.74 ± 0.46 km s^{-1} Mpc^{-1}
$\rho_{\text{crit},0}$	critical density	$(8.62 \pm 0.12) \times 10^{-27}$ kg m^{-3}
$\Omega_{\gamma,0}$	photon density parameter	$(5.38 \pm 0.15) \times 10^{-5}$
$\Omega_{r,0}$	radiation density parameter	$(9.02 \pm 0.21) \times 10^{-5}$
$\Omega_{b,0}$	baryon density parameter	0.0493 ± 0.0006
$\Omega_{\text{cdm},0}$	cold dark matter density par.	≈ 0.27
$\Omega_{m,0}$	total matter density parameter	0.3153 ± 0.0073
$\Omega_{\Lambda,0}$	dark energy density parameter	0.6847 ± 0.0073
$\Omega_{k,0}$	spatial curvature parameter	$\lvert\Omega_{k,0}\rvert < 0.005$
t_0	age of the universe	≈ 13.8 Gyr
t_{eq}	time of matter-radiation eq.	$\approx 50,000$ years
$t_{m\Lambda}$	time of matter-dark energy eq.	≈ 10.2 Gyr

Table 1.1: Summary of parameters of the ΛCDM model today.

but doesn't seem to be affected by the other fundamental interactions. Again, the temperature perturbations of the CMB allows us to estimate the fraction of dark matter in our universe, which turn out to be

$$\Omega_{\text{cdm},0} \approx 0.27,$$

where *cdm* stands for *cold dark matter*, which means that we are assuming that it is described by the same equation of state of dust ($\omega_d = 0$). In this way, the sum of baryon density and cold dark matter makes the total matter density of the universe

$$\Omega_{m,0} = 0.3153 \pm 0.0073.$$

Lastly we can note that, with all the above data, the Friedmann equation (1.19) is not satisfied

$$\sum_{\text{content}} \Omega_{,0} - 1 \approx 0.68 \neq \Omega_{k,0} \approx \pm 0.0005$$

this suggests that one more components of the universe should be taken into account. Current observations of type 1 Supernovae hint that this last ingredient must be **dark energy** ($\omega_v = -1$) with a corresponding density parameter

$$\Omega_{\Lambda,0} = 0.6847 \pm 0.0073.$$

The above set of data (Tab. 1.1) is what we usually refer to as the **ΛCDM model** as from this information we can set initial conditions for the Friedmann equation and then study backwards, from today, the history of our universe. Comparing all the density parameters we presented we note that out universe today is vacuum dominated. Then, recalling that $\rho_r \propto a^{-4}$, $\rho_d \propto a^{-3}$ while $\rho_v =$const, we understand that this was not always the case. Indeed, as we go back in time the universe shrinks and the energy density of matter and radiation raise: the former, being more dominant today, is the first one to dominate over dark energy, while the latter dominates over both at earlier times.
For this reason we usually subdivide the history in different eras, each one dominated by

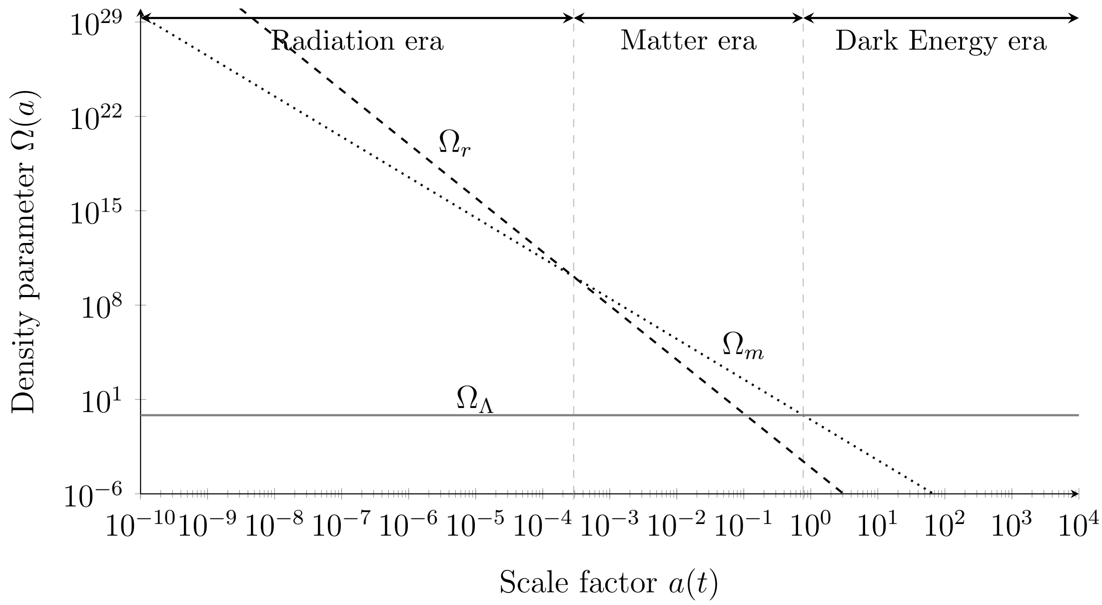


Figure 1.3: Evolution of the densities of matter, radiation and dark energy. In this plot the transitions between the main eras are showed.

a different fluid and we assume that the transition occurred when the density parameter of a specific fluid became grater then all the others[6].

The first transition that we encounter is between the current *dark energy dominated era* and the *matter dominated era*, from the definition of the density parameters we easily get (here we are assuming the usual convention $a_0 = 1$)

$$\Omega_\Lambda(t) = \Omega_{\Lambda,0}, \qquad \Omega_m(t) = \Omega_{m,0}a^{-3} \quad \Rightarrow \quad a_{m\Lambda} = \left(\frac{\Omega_{m,0}}{\Omega_{\Lambda,0}}\right)^{\frac{1}{3}} \approx 0.77,$$

when $\Omega_\Lambda(t) = \Omega_m(t)$. This allows us to obtain the redshift of the dark energy-matter transition $z_{m\Lambda} \approx 0.3$.

As we already described, proceeding backwards in time radiation starts to dominate: considering $\Omega_r(t) = \Omega_{r,0}a^{-4}$ we find that the transition occurs at

$$a_{\text{eq}} = \frac{\Omega_{r,0}}{\Omega_{m,0}} \approx 2.9 \times 10^{-4} \quad \Rightarrow \quad z_{\text{eq}} \approx 3400,$$

where the subscript *eq* stands for matter-radiation equality.

Going further back in time the scale factor continues to decrease ($a_{\text{rad}}(t) \propto \sqrt{t}$) and we reach a scale at which the universe was so small that quantum mechanics effects must be taken into account and a theory of *quantum gravity* is required. However, no-definitive solution for this problem has been found today.
For our purposes we will assume that the history of the universe started when $a = 0$, in this way we can convert our redshifts in comoving time. From the Friedmann equation

[6]Clearly, the dynamics of the universe must describe by a smooth function and this sharp transition approach let us simplify the calculations during a precise era in which we neglect all the subdominant fluids.

(1.17) $a(t)$ can be converted in a time by the following integral

$$H_0 t = \int_0^a \frac{da'}{\sqrt{\Omega_{r,0} a^{-2} + \Omega_{m,0} a^{-1} + \Omega_{\Lambda,0} a^2 + \Omega_{k,0}}} \Rightarrow \begin{cases} t_0 \approx 13.8 Gyrs, \\ t_{\mathrm{eq}} \approx 50\ 000 yrs, \\ t_{m\Lambda} \approx 10.2 Gyrs. \end{cases}$$

This shows that, compared to the entire life of the universe (t_0) the *radiation dominated era* lasted only for 50 000 years, while the *dark energy dominated era* is the closest to us, that started only a few billion years ago. Then the *matter dominated era* is the longest one of the three.

Chapter 2

The Hot Big Bang model

After having built the framework which describes the dynamics of spacetime, we shall now turn to studying the thermodynamic evolution of its constituents. *Statistical mechanics* connects the dynamical evolution of each particle in the expanding universe to macroscopic observable as the temperature, the energy density or in general the energy momentum tensor. In the next sections we will develop all the machinery to describe the evolution of the *phase space distribution* in curved spacetime, which leads to the **Boltzmann equation.**

As we rewind time from today, the universe shrinks and, as we can expect, the temperature increases. Hence, we expect the early universe to be a hot plasma of matter and radiation, also called **primordial plasma**. The model which describes its cooling history up to today is known as the **Hot Big Bang model**. The main result of this model, for our purpose, is that as the plasma cools down the kinetic energy of the particle decreases and thus some of them stop to interact with the other. These species, called *decoupled*, then evolve independently of the plasma, carrying information from their decoupling era. As we will see the *CMB* is the relic of the decoupled photons.

2.1 The Boltzmann equation

The expansion of the universe influences dynamically the motion of all the particles it contains, for example redshifting photon's frequency, hence also the corresponding energy and the momentum. Thermodynamically this is also reflected in the thermodynamic observables (for instance as the photon energy gets redshifted their temperature must decrease).

As far as we don't consider quantum mechanics, the state of a many-particle system is totally described by their positions and local momenta[1] $(\mathbf{x}_i, \mathbf{p}_i)$, which for N particles corresponds to $6N$ numbers. Already considering systems on the Earth this number becomes quite large, making unsolvable the exact dynamics of all these particles. Statistical mechanics builds then on the idea that all the macroscopic observables can be obtained from the statistics of the microscopic ones. This can be achieved by introducing a **phase space distribution** $f(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{p}, t)$ and then averaging over the phase space. In general, we

[1] The following treatment could also be done using the comoving momenta, in the end the resulting equations would have been a little different.

define

$$dN(\mathbf{x},\mathbf{p},t) = f(\mathbf{x},\mathbf{p},t)\frac{d^3xd^3p}{(2\pi)^2}, \tag{2.1}$$

where $dN(\mathbf{x},\mathbf{p},t)$ is the number of particles in the state $(\mathbf{x},\mathbf{p})$ at the instant t and the factor $d^3xd^3p/(2\pi)^2$ is the phase space measure normalized by the *Planck's constant*, which in natural units reads $h = (2\pi)^3$. The thermodynamic evolution of the system is then determined by how $f(\mathbf{x},\mathbf{p},t)$ changes over time: this is described by the **Boltzmann equation**

$$\hat{L}[f] = C[f], \tag{2.2}$$

where we introduced the two operators $\hat{L}$ and C. The former is called **Liouville operator** and it is defined as the total derivative with respect to time of f, while the latter is the **collision operator** which instead describes and depends on the interactions of the system. The effects of gravity are not considered interactions in general relativity (since gravity is not a force) and instead influences the system through the Liouville operator: indeed, by the chain rule we have

$$\hat{L}[f] \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \frac{df}{dt}(\mathbf{x},\mathbf{p},t) = \frac{\partial f}{\partial t} + \frac{\partial f}{\partial x^i}\frac{dx^i}{dt} + \frac{\partial f}{\partial p^i}\frac{dp^i}{dt},$$

the explicit form of this equation will show explicitly the dependence on the evolution of spacetime. For now, we are just considering an isotropic and homogeneous universe, hence we cannot expect f to depend on a specific position $\mathbf{x}$ nor on a specific direction $\hat{\mathbf{p}}$ (namely particles momenta can have different directions of motion but macroscopically no preferred direction should be distinguishable) and thus the equation above reduces to

$$\hat{L}[f] \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \frac{df}{dt}(p,t) = \frac{\partial f}{\partial t} + \frac{\partial f}{\partial p}\frac{dp}{dt}.$$

The only term we should compute is $\frac{dp}{dt}$: this can be obtained by the geodesic equation in FRW universe. Recalling that p is the modulus of the local 3-momentum, which is defined such that the mass-shell condition of flat spacetime holds

$$m^2 = -P^\mu P_\mu = (P^0)^2 - a^2(t)P^iP^j\delta_{ij} = E^2 - p^ip^j\delta_{ij} \quad \Rightarrow \quad \begin{cases} E \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} P^0 \\ p^i \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} aP^i \end{cases},$$

where a different metric would lead to a different definition of local energy (E) and momentum, the geodesic equation gives

$$\begin{aligned} &\frac{dP^i}{dt} = -\Gamma^i_{\mu\nu}\frac{P^\mu P^\nu}{P^0} = -2\Gamma^i_{j0}P^j = -2HP^i \\ \Rightarrow \quad &\frac{dp}{dt} = Hp + a\frac{d}{dt}\sqrt{P^iP^j\delta_{ij}} = Hp + \frac{ap^i}{p}\frac{dP^j}{dt}\delta_{ij} = -Hp, \end{aligned}$$

where we used that the only non-vanishing Christoffel symbol with an upper spatial index must have just one lower spatial index. Putting all together we find the Liouville operator for a homogeneous and isotropic universe

$$\hat{L}[f] = \frac{\partial f}{\partial t} - Hp\frac{\partial f}{\partial p}. \tag{2.3}$$

Since the explicit form of the collision operator depends on the physics of the different components of the universe, we won't focus here on the derivation of such term.

2.1.1 Thermodynamic observables

Having sketched the way in which the phase space distribution can be obtained, we now have to describe how to compute the macroscopic observables that describe the plasma that filled the universe.

We already know, form the definition (2.1), that integrating over phase space f yields the total number of particles. When dealing with the whole universe, computing extensive quantities is not very convenient, instead integrating only over momentum space clearly yields intensive quantities (e.g. number density $n \overset{\text{def}}{=} N/V$). The immediate generalization of (2.1) is the *particle current density*

$$N^\mu \overset{\text{def}}{=} \frac{g_{\text{dof}}}{(2\pi)^3\sqrt{-g}} \int d^3P \frac{P^\mu}{P^0} f(p,t) = \frac{g_{\text{dof}}}{(2\pi)^3} \int d^3p \frac{P^\mu}{P^0} f(p,t), \tag{2.4}$$

where we introduced the degeneracy factor g_{dof} which counts the number of internal degrees of freedom of the particles (e.g. $g_{\text{photons}} = 2$). We recognize that the zeroth component corresponds to the number density n while the spatial components represent the 3-current density $\mathbf{j}$[2]. Indeed, imposing the conservation of the particle current density we recover the conservation of the particle number

$$\begin{aligned}
0 = N^\mu{}_{;\mu} &= \frac{g_{\text{dof}}}{(2\pi)^3 a^3} \frac{\partial}{\partial t}\left(a^3 \int d^3p \frac{P^0}{P^0} f\right) = \frac{g_{\text{dof}}}{(2\pi)^3}\left[3H \int d^3p\ f + \int d^3p \frac{\partial f}{\partial t}\right] \\
&= \frac{g_{\text{dof}}}{(2\pi)^3}\left[3H \int d^3p\ f + H \int d^3p\ p\frac{\partial f}{\partial p} + \int d^3p\ \hat{L}[f]\right] \\
&\Big\downarrow \text{Integrating by parts the second term} \\
&= \frac{g_{\text{dof}}}{(2\pi)^3} \int d^3p\ \hat{L}[f] \\
\Rightarrow &\qquad \boxed{\frac{1}{a^3}\frac{\partial(a^3 n)}{\partial t} = \frac{g_{\text{dof}}}{(2\pi)^3} \int d^3p\ \hat{L}[f] = \frac{g_{\text{dof}}}{(2\pi)^3} \int d^3p\ C[f]},
\end{aligned}$$

where in the first line we used that the 4-divergence of a 4-vector is $A^\mu{}_{;\mu} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{-g}} \frac{\partial(\sqrt{-g}A^\mu)}{\partial x^\mu}$. In absence of interactions, that could source or remove particles, this reduces to the requirement that the number of particle in a given volume is fixed, namely $a^3 n = \text{const}$.

Similarly, the energy-momentum tensor can be redefined as a function of the phase space distribution

$$T^\mu{}_\nu \overset{\text{def}}{=} \frac{g_{\text{dof}}}{(2\pi)^3\sqrt{-g}} \int d^3P \frac{P^\mu P_\nu}{P^0} f(p,t) = \frac{g_{\text{dof}}}{(2\pi)^3} \int d^3p \frac{p^\mu p_\nu}{p^0} f(p,t), \tag{2.5}$$

where $p^0 \overset{\text{def}}{=} E$. The above expression allows computing the energy density and the pressure of the corresponding cosmic fluid.

Overall we shall recall two quantities

$$n = \frac{g_{\text{dof}}}{(2\pi)^3} \int d^3p\ f(p,t), \qquad \rho = \frac{g_{\text{dof}}}{(2\pi)^3} \int d^3p\ E\ f(p,t),$$

which we will use extensively in the next sections.

[2] Note that $\mathbf{j} = 0$ to have isotropy.

2.1.2 Equilibrium distributions

Determining macroscopic observable can become rather non-trivial when considering systems which are not in equilibrium. We will see that the early universe, due to the high efficiency of the interactions in the plasma, can be approximately considered as a system in equilibrium. This simplification allows obtaining analytic results that can already grasp the main features of the evolution of the plasma. Further improvements can be achieved numerically or by means of perturbation theory, however we will not focus on these here. In general, the equilibrium distribution is a stationary solution $\frac{\partial f}{\partial t} = 0$, not to be confused with the condition $\frac{df}{dt} = 0$. If we consider the *collisionless case* ($C[f] = 0$) the equilibrium distribution is determined completely by the initial condition of the system (since now the Boltzmann equation gives us f = const). However, in presence of interactions the distribution will be determined by the collision operator too.

Let's consider the interaction rate Γ associated to the interactions in the plasma, for large values of Γ we expect to have also a large contribution from $C[f]$ in the Boltzmann equation. The effects of gravity in the Boltzmann equations are instead proportional to the Hubble parameter H (see equation (2.3)). In this way we can understand that, as a first approximation, in the limit $\Gamma \gg H$ the effects of the expansion of the universe become negligible and we can use well-known phase space distributions, while when $\Gamma \ll H$ the interactions are negligible and only the expansion will influence the system for which holds the conservation of particles we previously obtained. When a particular component of the universe transitions from the first case to the second, we usually say that it *freezes-out*. In general, we can expect the interaction rate to be proportional to the number density of particle while we know that the Hubble parameter is instead a decreasing function of time ($H \propto t^{2/(3+3\omega)-1}$), this means that initially, when the universe was denser, the phase space was mainly influenced by interactions, while at later times different species started to freeze-out and to cool down as the universe expanded.

When the interactions are dominant and equilibrium is met, we expect to obtain a **Bose-Einstein** distribution or a **Fermi-Dirac** distribution, respectively for bosons and fermions

$$f(p) = \left[\exp\left\{\frac{E(p)+\mu}{k_B T}\right\} \pm 1\right], \qquad (+) \text{ for fermions and } (-) \text{ for bosons.} \tag{2.6}$$

In the above it appears the *chemical potential* μ, which measures the energy needed to remove or insert a new particle in the system and it can be temperature dependent. Knowing the phase space distribution we can now compute the number density and the energy density, however their exact expression can be hard to be found. We will therefore focus on two physically meaningful limits: the **ultrarelativistic limit** $T \gg m$, in which the particles behave as radiation, and the **non-relativistic limit** $T \ll m$, for which we recover the classical behavior.

Ultrarelativistic limit

Very light particles, such as neutrinos, or with a large momentum (compared to their rest mass) can be approximated to be massless as photons. Hence, the mass-shell condition implies that $E = p$, moreover we will assume that the chemical potential is negligible for these species. This last assumption is reasonable considering that at equilibrium, in presence of interactions that can change the number of particles, μ should vanish. Under these assumptions we can compute the number density of ultrarelativistic particles

$$n = \frac{g_{\text{dof}}}{(2\pi)^3} \int d^3p \, \frac{1}{\exp(\frac{p}{k_B T}) \pm 1} = \frac{g_{\text{dof}}}{2\pi^2} \int_0^\infty dp \frac{p^2}{\exp(\frac{p}{k_B T}) \pm 1} = \frac{g_{\text{dof}}}{2\pi^2} (k_B T)^3 \int_0^\infty dx \frac{x^2}{e^x \pm 1},$$

here we can observe that the fermionic (+) case can be obtained from the calculations for bosons (-) by

$$\frac{1}{e^x + 1} = \frac{1}{e^x - 1} - \frac{2}{e^{2x} - 1},$$

performing the change of variable $2x \to x$ in the second term we find that the fermionic integral is $1 - 2(1/2)^3 = 3/4$ the bosonic one. Exploiting the geometric series, the bosonic integral yields

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{g_{\text{dof}}}{2\pi^2} (k_B T)^3 \int_0^\infty dx \frac{x^2 e^{-x}}{1 - e^{-x}} &= \frac{g_{\text{dof}}}{2\pi^2} (k_B T)^3 \int_0^\infty dx \; x^2 e^{-x} \sum_{n=0}^\infty e^{-nx} \\ &= \frac{g_{\text{dof}}}{2\pi^2} (k_B T)^3 \sum_{n=0}^\infty \frac{2}{(n+1)^3} \xrightarrow[\text{Riemman zeta function}]{\zeta(z) \overset{\text{def}}{=} \sum_{n=1}^\infty n^{-z}} \frac{g_{\text{dof}}}{\pi^2} \zeta(3) (k_B T)^3. \end{aligned}$$

From our previous observation we conclude that

$$n = \frac{g_{\text{dof}}}{\pi^2} \zeta(3) (k_B T)^3 \begin{cases} 1 & \text{bosons,} \\ \frac{3}{4} & \text{fermions.} \end{cases} \tag{2.7}$$

Similarly, the energy density reads

$$\rho = \frac{g_{\text{dof}}}{(2\pi)^3} \int d^3p \, \frac{E}{\exp(\frac{p}{k_B T}) \pm 1} = \frac{g_{\text{dof}}}{2\pi^2} \int_0^\infty dp \frac{p^3}{\exp(\frac{p}{k_B T}) \pm 1} = \frac{g_{\text{dof}}}{2\pi^2} (k_B T)^4 \int_0^\infty dx \frac{x^3}{e^x \pm 1},$$

where this time the fermion integral (+) turns out to be $1 - 2(1/2)^4 = 7/8$ the bosonic one. Proceeding with the calculations for bosons we find

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{g_{\text{dof}}}{2\pi^2} (k_B T)^4 \int_0^\infty dx \frac{x^3 e^{-x}}{1 - e^{-x}} &= \frac{g_{\text{dof}}}{2\pi^2} (k_B T)^4 \int_0^\infty dx \; x^3 e^{-x} \sum_{n=0}^\infty e^{-nx} \\ &= \frac{g_{\text{dof}}}{2\pi^2} (k_B T)^4 \sum_{n=0}^\infty \frac{6}{(n+1)^4} \xrightarrow[\text{Riemman zeta function}]{\zeta(z) \overset{\text{def}}{=} \sum_{n=1}^\infty n^{-z}} 3 \frac{g_{\text{dof}}}{\pi^2} \zeta(4) (k_B T)^4. \end{aligned}$$

Using that $\zeta(4) = \pi^4/90$ we have

$$\rho = \frac{\pi^2}{30} g_{\text{dof}} (k_B T)^4 \begin{cases} 1 & \text{bosons,} \\ \frac{7}{8} & \text{fermions.} \end{cases} \tag{2.8}$$

In appendix B.1.1 expressions for the energy and number densities are computed in presence of a small chemical potential for bosons.

Non-relativistic limit

Heavy particles at low temperature, namely $T \ll m$, (which corresponds to low momenta) behave classically, as we can see expanding the relativistic kinetic energy

$$E(p) = \sqrt{p^2 + m^2} \approx m + \frac{1}{2m}p^2 + \mathcal{O}(p^2).$$

In this limit both Bose-Einstein and Fermi-Dirac distributions reduce to the **Boltzmann** distribution

$$f(p) = \left[\exp\left\{\frac{E(p)+\mu}{k_B T}\right\} \pm 1\right] \xrightarrow{T \ll m} e^{-\frac{E(p)+\mu}{k_B T}} \approx e^{-\frac{m+\mu}{k_B T}} e^{-\frac{p^2}{2mk_B T}}.$$

Under this approximation, both the integral for the number denisty and of the energy density become Gaussian integrals

$$\begin{aligned} n &= \frac{g_{\mathrm{dof}}}{(2\pi)^3}\int d^3p \; \frac{1}{\exp(\frac{E(p)+\mu}{k_B T}) \pm 1} \approx \frac{g_{\mathrm{dof}}}{2\pi^2} e^{-\frac{m+\mu}{k_B T}} \int_0^\infty dp \; p^2 e^{-\frac{p^2}{2mk_B T}} \\ &= \frac{g_{\mathrm{dof}}}{2\pi^2} e^{-\frac{m+\mu}{k_B T}} (mk_B T)^{\frac{3}{2}} \int_0^\infty dx \; x^2 e^{-\frac{x^2}{2}} = g_{\mathrm{dof}} \left(\frac{mk_B T}{2\pi}\right)^{\frac{3}{2}} e^{-\frac{m+\mu}{k_B T}}, \qquad (2.9) \\ \rho &= \frac{g_{\mathrm{dof}}}{(2\pi)^3}\int d^3p \; \frac{E}{\exp(\frac{E(p)+\mu}{k_B T}) \pm 1} \approx \frac{g_{\mathrm{dof}}}{2\pi^2} e^{-\frac{m+\mu}{k_B T}} \int_0^\infty dp \; p^2 e^{-\frac{p^2}{2mk_B T}} \left(m + \frac{p^2}{2m}\right) \\ &= nm + \frac{nT}{2}\left[\sqrt{\frac{2}{\pi}} \int_0^\infty dx \; x^4 e^{-\frac{x^2}{2}}\right] = nm + \frac{3}{2}nT. \qquad (2.10) \end{aligned}$$

Notice that in the non-relativistic case the number and energy densities are exponentially suppressed at high temperatures while in the relativistic limit we have that both are monotonically increasing with the temperature

2.2 Primordial plasma

As we already mentioned, at the earliest times our universe was filled by a hot plasma of interacting particles. We now know that these species can be described as relativistic particles: initially all the interactions are quite efficient and the plasma is kept at equilibrium. Then, as the universe cools down, some species start to become non-relativistic and their contributions to the energy and number to be exponentially suppressed. Moreover, at high temperature ($T \gg m$) particle-antiparticle pairs production is sustainable counterbalancing their annihilation. Instead, once the temperature drops below the mass of a specific species pair production stops and they annihilate.

In general, the total energy density of the universe depends on the temperature and on the degeneracy factor of each species

$$\rho = T^4 \left[\sum_{\text{Bosons}} g_i \left(\frac{T_i}{T}\right)^4 + \frac{7}{8} \sum_{\text{Fermions}} g_j \left(\frac{T_j}{T}\right)^4\right] \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} g_*(T) T^4, \qquad (2.11)$$

where the indexes i and j run over the bosonic and fermionic species respectively. In the above we defined the *effective number of relativistic degrees of freedom* g_*, note that this quantity depends on the temperature of all the species in the plasma. When all the different species are in equilibrium g_* counts the total number of relativistic degrees of freedom. Considering the *Standard Model of particles* the total number of degrees of freedom are divided in the following way.

- **Gauge bosons**, which are the carrier of the three fundamental interactions, are all spin-1 particles: photons and the eight gluons of the QCD are massless thus they have 2 d.o.f. each, while the $W^{\pm}$ and Z bosons of the Weak interaction being massive posses 3 d.o.f. each. On top of these, we must add the **Higgs boson**, which is a scalar spin-0 field, thus having one single internal degree of freedom. Overall the total number of bosonic d.o.f is

$$g_{\text{Bosons}} = 2 \times 9 + 3 \times 3 + 1 = 28.$$

- **Fermions** are instead the particles responsible for the matter we observe in the universe and they are all massive spin-1/2 particles. **Charged leptons** ($e^{\pm}, \mu^{\pm}, \tau^{\pm}$) are massive charged particles, each flavor (e.g. electron, muon, ...) has 2 d.o.f. for each spin state. The electric charge allows for antiparticles to exist, doubling the d.o.f. to $3 \times 2 \times 2 = 12$. **Quarks** (t, b, c, s, d, u), on top of the electric charge, posses also a *color charge* (blue, red, green) resulting in $6 \times 2 \times 2 \times 3 = 72$ degrees of freedom. Lastly, **neutrinos** (ν_e, ν_μ, ν_τ) do not possess any charge, however understanding the number of internal d.o.f. they possess is more involved. Indeed the Standard Model predicts three massless neutrinos, to respect its gauge symmetries, however we now know that they have a small mass, even though we still don't know whether they have a *Majorana mass* or a *Dirac mass*. Observations suggest that only 2 d.o.f for each flavor influence the primordial plasma, this could be explained or by having a Majorana mass (which would make the neutrino being its own antiparticle) or by assuming that, having a Dirac mass, the antineutrinos decoupled from the plasma at very early times. Overall the degrees of freedom of fermions are

$$g_{\text{fermions}} = 3 \times 2 \times 2 + 6 \times 2 \times 2 \times 3 + 6 = 90.$$

Summing all together and accounting for the difference between bosons and fermions we find

$$g_* = g_{\text{Bosons}} + \frac{7}{8}\, g_{\text{Fermions}} = 106.75 \tag{2.12}$$

2.2.1 Annihilation and decoupling of species

As we already explained, as the primordial plasma cools down and the temperature drops below the mass of a species, the pair-production process stops and the species annihilates reducing the number of relativistic degrees of freedom of the plasma. The heaviest particle of the Standard Model is the *top quark*, with $m_t = 171$ GeV, and thus it annihilates first. Then the *Higgs* (125 Gev) and the *gauge bosons* annihilate, followed by the *bottom quark*. After the *charm quark* and the *tauon* annihilated, right before the turn of the *strange quark*, **QCD phase transition** occurs: at $T \sim 150$ Mev the remaining quarks combine into baryons (protons, neutrons, ...) and mesons (pions, ...). All the resulting species, except the pions ($\pi^{\pm}, \pi^0$) are non-relativistic at this temperature and thus exponentially suppressed, leaving in large number in the plasma only pions, electrons, muons, neutrinos

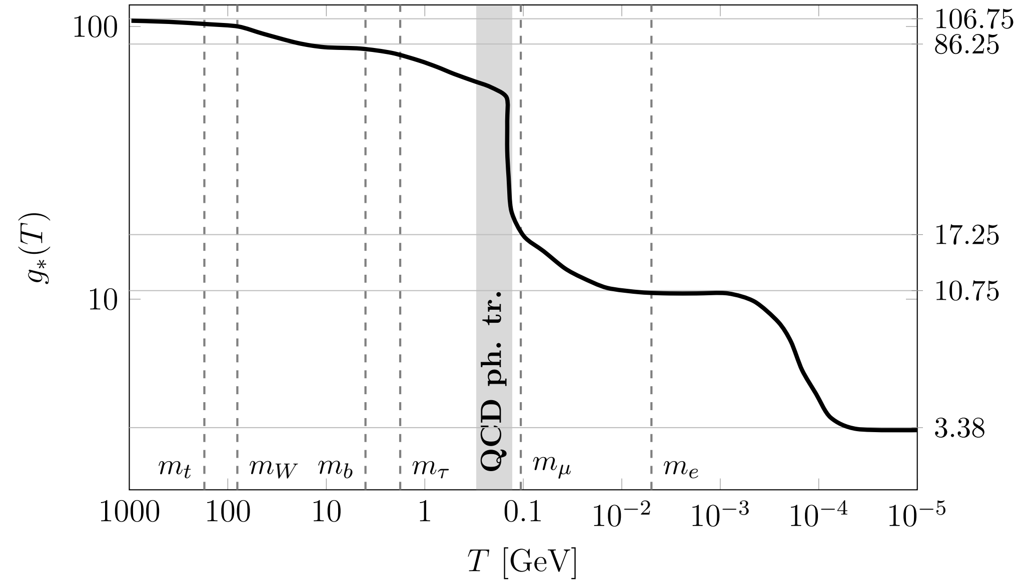


Figure 2.1: Evolution of the effective number of relativistic degrees of freedom g_* as a function of the temperature in the early universe.

and photons. The three types of pions are spin-0 bosons with 1 d.o.f each: after QCD phase transition the relativistic degrees of freedom are just $g_* = 2+3+\frac{7}{8}\times(4+4+6) = 17.254$. As the universe continues cooling down *muons* and *pions* annihilate leading to $g_* = 10.75$. At this point in the thermal history of our universe some interactions start to stop (the expansion rate H dominates over Γ) and the next species will **decouple** without annihilation.

The first interactions to stop, at around $T \sim 1$ MeV, is the Weak interaction of neutrinos such as

$$\nu_e + \bar{\nu}_e \rightleftharpoons e^+ + e^-.$$

After decoupling the collision term of neutrinos is negligible and thus the number of neutrinos is conserved: this shows that neutrinos then start to cool as

$$\text{const} = na^3 \propto T_\nu^3 a^3 \qquad \Rightarrow \qquad T_\nu \propto a^{-1},$$

independently to what happens at the rest of the plasma. The relic of these neutrinos is also called *cosmic neutrino background* (CνB).

Shortly after neutrino decoupling, the temperature reaches the electron mass and thus electron/positron annihilation occurs producing photons

$$e^+ + e^- \quad \longrightarrow \quad \gamma + \gamma.$$

In this process the energy of the annihilated electrons is transferred to photons heating them a bit resulting in a slightly colder relic of neutrinos compared to photons. At this point some electron survived the annihilation due to an initial *matter-antimatter asymmetry*, which origin is still unclear.

As the universe continues to cool down the temperature reaches the bound energy of Hydrogen atoms thus allowing for the remaining free electrons and nuclei (formed by interaction of protons and neutrons) to bound.

2.2.2 Recombination

The phase in which the first atoms formed is called **recombination**: at this point in time only electrons that survived the annihilation and nuclei were part of the plasma. Around 90% of the nuclei in the plasma are just protons and thus they will form with electrons Hydrogen atoms. The remaining nuclei will instead form Helium atoms, which we are going to neglect here.

To study the reaction that results into Hydrogen,

$$e^- + p^+ \rightleftharpoons H + \gamma,$$

we will consider a universe filled only by e^-, p^+ and H all in the non-relativistic regime $T \ll m_i$. At equilibrium the number density of these three species is given by equation (2.9): in the end we want to find the temperature at which recombination occurs, namely when $n_H \gg n_e, n_p$. A way to compare these three densities is by constructing the following ratio

$$\left.\frac{n_H}{n_e n_p}\right|_{\text{eq}} = \frac{g_H}{g_e g_p}\left(\frac{m_H}{m_e m_p}\frac{2\pi}{k_B T}\right)^{\frac{3}{2}} \exp\left(\frac{m_p + m_e - m_H}{k_b T}\right),$$

where we used the (2.9) and we imposed that $\mu_e + \mu_p = \mu_H$ to have equilibrium. Notice that this construction gives us automatically the quantity

$$E_I \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} m_p + m_e - m_H = 13.6 \text{ eV}$$

which turns out to be the *ionization energy of the Hydrogen atom*, namely the energy needed to remove the electron from the ground state of H. The internal degrees of freedom of both protons and electrons are 2 (the 2 $\frac{1}{2}$-spin states) while for H they are 4, as they correspond to the states allowed by the sum of the spins of e and p, which are a singlet of spin 0 and a triplet of spin 1. Exploiting that $m_H \approx m_p$ and that the universe isn't electrically charged ($n_e = n_p$) the above reads

$$\left.\frac{n_H}{n_e^2}\right|_{\text{eq}} = \left(\frac{2\pi}{m_e k_B T}\right)^{\frac{3}{2}} \exp\left(\frac{E_I}{k_b T}\right).$$

Instead of studying this equation in the limit in which the free electrons are zero, it is often defined the **free-electron fraction**, which represents the fraction of free electrons over the Hydrogen atoms (both neutral and ionized),

$$X_e \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \frac{n_e}{n_p + n_H} = \frac{n_e}{n_e + n_H} \quad \Rightarrow \quad \frac{1 - X_e}{X_e^2} = \frac{n_H}{n_e^2}(n_e + n_H) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \frac{n_H}{n_e^2} n_b, \tag{2.13}$$

where we defined the number density of baryons n_b. The main advantage is that the **baryon-to-photon ratio** $\eta \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} n_b/n_\gamma$ from now on is conserved and we can easily compute n_γ from equation (2.7) finding

$$\left.\frac{1 - X_e}{X_e^2}\right|_{\text{eq}} = \frac{2\zeta(3)}{\pi^2}\eta\left(\frac{2\pi k_B T}{m_e}\right)^{\frac{3}{2}} \exp\left(\frac{E_I}{k_B T}\right), \tag{2.14}$$

which is the **Saha equation**. We can solve the above for X_e to find

$$\left. X_e \right|_{\text{eq}} = \frac{-1 + \sqrt{1 + 4f}}{2f} \qquad \text{with } f(T, \eta) = \frac{2\zeta(3)}{\pi^2}\eta\left(\frac{2\pi k_B T}{m_e}\right)^{\frac{3}{2}} \exp\left(\frac{E_I}{k_B T}\right)$$

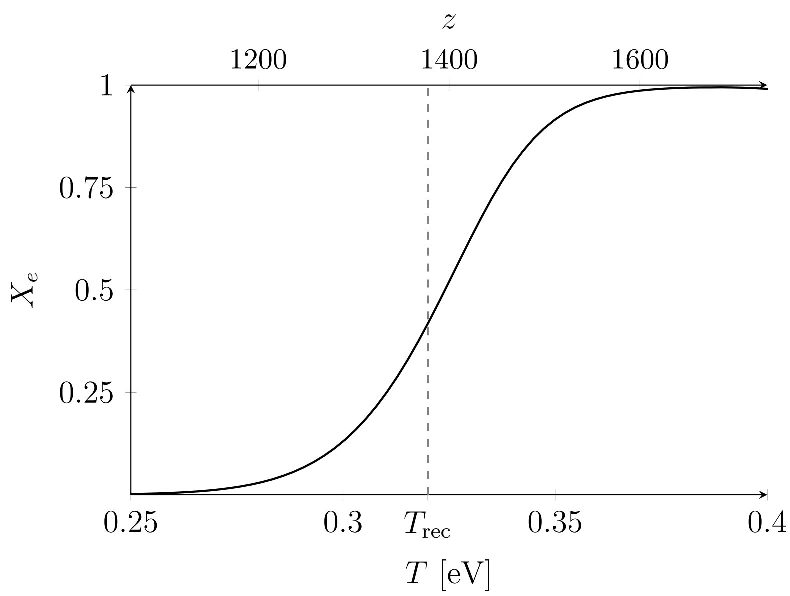


Figure 2.2: Free electron fraction X_e as a function of temperature T (in eV) and redshift for $\eta = 6 \times 10^{-10}$ and $E_I = 13.6$ eV. From the graph we can appreciate when recombination occurs.

which is shows in Figure 2.2. We can appreciate that the fraction of free electrons drops at around $T \approx 0.32$ ev ≈ 3760 K. Note that the temperature at which recombination occurs is one order of magnitude lower than the ionization energy of Hydrogen, this happens because there are more free photons that Hydrogen atoms: this means that even at $T < E_I$ a non-negligible fraction of photons have still $E_\gamma > E_I$, being in the tail of their energy distribution. Knowing that the temperature of photons today (CMB) is $T_\gamma \approx 2.73$ K and that $T_\gamma \propto a^{-1}$ (since as we will see right after recombination photon decoupling occurs), we can compute the redshift at which Hydrogen formed

$$1 + z_{\rm rec} = \frac{T_{\rm rec}}{T_{\gamma,0}} \approx 1380.$$

Similarly, we can compute the duration of recombination, which is $\Delta z \approx 80$, or $\Delta t \approx 7 \times 10^4$ years, to go from $X_e = 0.9$ to 0.1. Note that recombination occurs entirely during the matter-dominated era, as $z_{\rm rec} < z_{\rm eq} = 3400$.

We conclude by mentioning that the estimate we found can be further refined considering the non-equilibrium solution of the Boltzmann equation, since as the fraction of free electrons decreases it gets harder to maintain equilibrium. The full calculation would show that recombination gets delayed to $z_{\rm rec} \approx 1270$.

2.2.3 Photon decoupling and the CMB

Until recombination photons were kept in equilibrium with the rest of the plasma mainly through *Compton scattering*

$$e^- + \gamma \rightleftharpoons e^- + \gamma$$

which we will discuss in more detail in chapter 7. As we will see, the interaction rate for this process can be estimated as $\Gamma_\gamma \approx n_e \sigma_T$, where $\sigma_T \approx 2 \times 10^{-3}$ MeV^{-2} is the Thompson cross-section, therefore decoupling depends on the number of free electrons in the universe. In the previous section we studied the evolution of this quantity discovering that at recombination the fraction of free electrons drops to zero, in this way the interaction rate will eventually become smaller than the expansion rate of the universe. We know that at that moment interactions become essentially negligible, photon decouples and their number gets conserved. From Saha equation (2.14) and Friedmann equation (1.17) we find

$$\Gamma_\gamma \approx \sigma_T X_e n_b = 2\sigma_T X_e \eta \frac{\zeta(3)}{\pi^2} T^3,$$
$$H = H_0 \sqrt{\frac{\rho(t)}{\rho_0}} = H_0 \sqrt{\Omega_m} \left(\frac{a(t)}{a_0}\right)^{-\frac{3}{2}} = H_0 \sqrt{\Omega_m} \left(\frac{T}{T_0}\right)^{\frac{3}{2}},$$

where in the first equation we used the expression of the energy density of photons (2.8) and in the second one we assumed a matter dominated universe (as recombination occurs after equality) while we used that $T_\gamma \propto a^{-1}$. The decoupling temperature can be obtained as the temperature at which $H \approx \Gamma_\gamma$, from the above we get

$$X_e(T_{\text{dec}}) T_{\text{dec}}^{\frac{3}{2}} \approx \frac{\pi^2}{2\zeta(3)} \frac{H_0 \sqrt{\Omega_m}}{\eta \sigma_T T_0^{3/2}},$$

where T_0 is the temperature of the CMB today, $\eta \approx 6 \times 10^{-10}$ remains the same from decoupling to today. Inserting the values of H_0 and Ω_m of the ΛCDM model (section 1.2.3) and using the Saha equation we find a decoupling temperature of $T_{\text{dec}} \approx 0.27$ ev ≈ 3200 K, which corresponds to $z_{\text{dec}} \approx T_{\text{dec}}/T_0 \approx 1190$.

As for recombination, studying the non-equilibrium solutions of the Boltzmann equation would lead to a more precise estimate $z_{\text{dec}} \approx 1090$. In both cases we can appreciate how recombination plays a fundamental role in the decoupling of photons: indeed $X_e(T_{\text{dec}}) \approx 10^{-3} \ll X_e(T_{\text{rec}}) \approx 0.5$.

As photons decouple from the plasma they stop to scatter off electrons, we usually refer to the set of point in which the last scattering occur as the **last scattering surface**. This surface sits at the distance that photons travelled from recombination to reach us today, however the last scattering occurs at slightly different times for different photons, thus producing a thin layer rather than a surface. Mathematically, the fact that photons don't scatter anymore is described by the **optical depth**

$$\tau_D(t) \overset{\text{def}}{=} \int_t^{t_0} dt'\; \Gamma_\gamma(t') = \int_t^{t_0} dt'\; \sigma_T n_e(t'), \tag{2.15}$$

before photon decoupling $\tau_D \gg 1$ and the universe is said to be *opaque*, while after recombination Γ_γ drops and thus $\tau_D \ll 1$ making the universe transparent.

As we already anticipated several times, the decoupled photons then travel freely in the universe until some of them reach us in the form of the **Cosmic Microwave Background radiation**. When we observe them the expansion of the universe, since the number of photons is now conserved ($na^3 \propto T^3 a^3 = \text{const}$), cooled them down to 2.73 K (section 1.2.3). Assuming that before decoupling photons where in equilibrium, their phase space distribution should be a Bose-Einstein distribution (2.6) with a vanishing chemical potential: notice that, as both $E = p = h\nu$ and the temperature get redshifted,

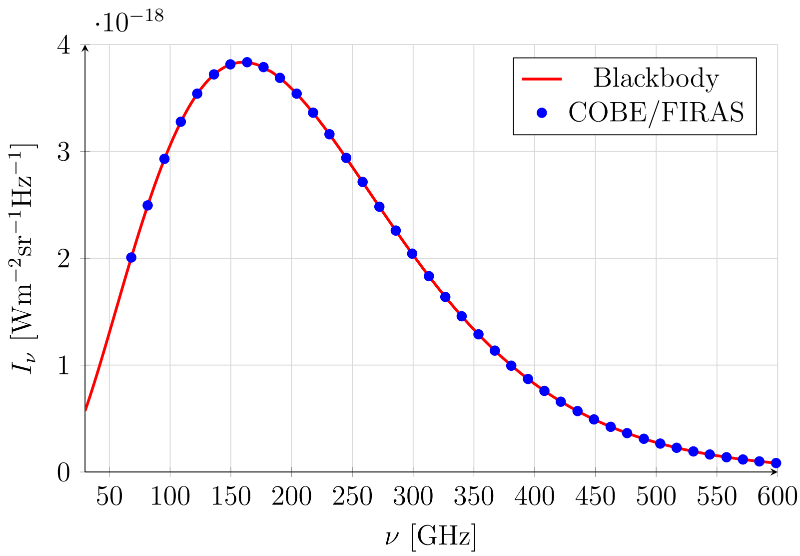


Figure 2.3: COBE/FIRAS [11] CMB spectral radiance compared to the theoretical prediction of a blackbody radiation. COBE/FIRAS points perfectly match the curve with errors too small to be appreciated.

the shape of such distribution remains the same. However, the phase distribution is not a direct observable. What experiments measure is the **spectral radiation intensity** or **spectral radiance** I_ν, which measures the flux of energy per unit area and frequency. The number density of photons with frequencies in between ν and $\nu + d\nu$, from (2.4), reads

$$n(T,p)dp = \frac{2}{h^3}\frac{4\pi p^2 dp}{\exp(\frac{E}{k_B T}) - 1} = \frac{2}{c^3}\frac{4\pi \nu^2 d\nu}{\exp(\frac{h\nu}{k_B T}) - 1} = n(T,\nu)d\nu, \tag{2.16}$$

where we restored the c and h factors through $E = cp = h\nu$. This distribution is usually called **blackbody spectrum**. To obtain the spectral radiance let's first fix a specific direction $\hat{\mathbf{n}}$ and consider photons moving along it. Now we pick a solid angle $\delta\Omega$ around $\hat{\mathbf{n}}$: during an infinitesimal amount of time δt photons in the solid angle will cross a surface of area $\delta A = (c\delta t)^2\delta\Omega$. The number of photons that cross this surface is given by integrating the blackbody spectrum (2.16) over the volume they went through $\delta V = c\delta t\delta A$ and by dividing everything by 4π, since equation (2.16) accounts for photons moving in all directions while we fixed $\hat{\mathbf{n}}$. In this way the flux of photons though δA is

$$\frac{\delta N}{\delta A\delta t} = \frac{2}{c^3}\frac{\nu^2 d\nu}{\exp(\frac{h\nu}{k_B T}) - 1}\frac{(\delta t c)\delta A}{\delta A\delta t} = \frac{2}{c^2}\frac{\nu^2 d\nu}{\exp(\frac{h\nu}{k_B T}) - 1},$$

and the energy flux is obtained considering that each photon carries $h\nu$ energy

$$I_\nu = \frac{2h}{c^2}\frac{\nu^3}{\exp(\frac{h\nu}{k_B T}) - 1}. \tag{2.17}$$

In figure 2.3 we can appreciate the spectral radiance measured by the FIRAS instrument on the COBE satellite [11], which perfectly fits the theoretical prediction proving right the assumption that photons were in thermal equilibrium before recombination.

In chapter 7 we will explore more in depth whether and how photons were in equilibrium at different times: we will discover that small distortions will be sourced in the phase space distribution, and thus also in the spectral radiance. These **spectral distortions** turn out to be smaller than the sensitivity of both COBE/FIRAS and Planck [8].

Chapter 3

Inflation

As we discussed in Section 1.2.3, current observations of the CMB show that the early universe was almost perfectly homogeneous (CMB temperature anisotropies are $\Delta T/T \approx 10^{-5}$) and all the components of the cosmic fluid were extremely close to thermal equilibrium. This allowed us to recognize extra symmetries that simplified the Einstein field equations to the Friedmann one. However, the question of how the universe got so uniform remains still to be answered. In this chapter we will explore more in depth this problem, called the **horizon problem**, to illustrate the most widely accepted solution, **inflation**.

3.1 The flatness problem and its solution

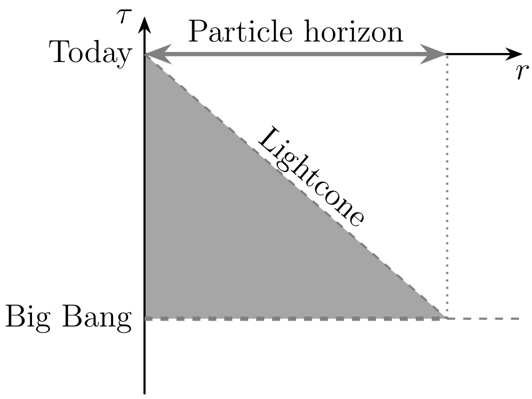
A homogeneous universe could be the result of the highly efficient thermalization process occurring in the primordial universe, that were described in the previous chapter. A complete thermalization of the observable universe can take place only if the patch we observe was in complete causal contact before recombination (since that is the time in which the CMB was formed and then interactions stopped). Whether two point were in causal contact at a previous time can be determined by studying if each light cone of each point fully intersects in their past: this gives us a direct and easy way to determine whether the thermalization approach represents a good candidate to explain an isotropic and homogeneous universe.

In the context of cosmology the *comoving particle horizon* can be used to understand whether two points were in causal contact at a given time. This is defined as the distance that light travelled from a specific point, starting in the first instant of existence of the universe up to a determined later time (Figure 3.1a)

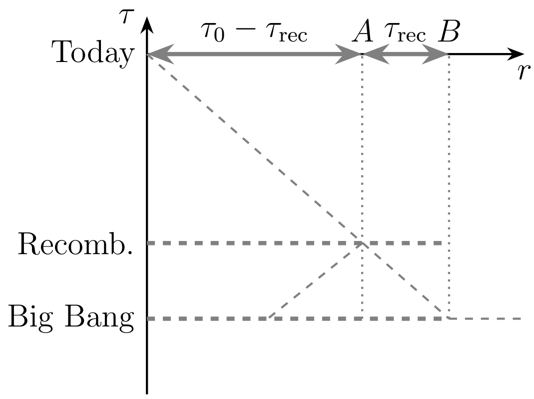
$$\Delta r_{\max} \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \int_0^t \frac{dt'}{a(t')}. \tag{3.1}$$

Note that this definition corresponds perfectly with the definition of conformal time. Furthermore, this distance is directly connected to the lightcone of the point we are studying, being the projection of its maximum size in the past, on space today.

When dealing with distances that we observe in the sky, it is better to use the angle that separates them. For small angles the corresponding distance can be approximated by $d_{AB} \approx \theta r_A$, where d_{AB} is the comoving distance between two points A and B and



(a) Comoving particle horizon in a spacetime diagram.



(b) Projection of the comoving particle horizon at recombination on today sky.

Figure 3.1: Graphical representation of causal connection in cosmology: Figure (a) displays the definition of the comoving particle horizon while Figure (b) shows how the portion of sky which is causally connected at recombination is computed. In both diagrams conformal time is used since FRW metric with these coordinates is conformally equivalent to Minkowski spacetime.

r_A is the comoving distance between us and the point A. In this way, the maximum angle between two points in the sky that were causally connected at recombination can be approximated by

$$\theta_{\rm max} \approx \frac{\tau_{\rm rec}}{\tau_0 - \tau_{\rm rec}},$$

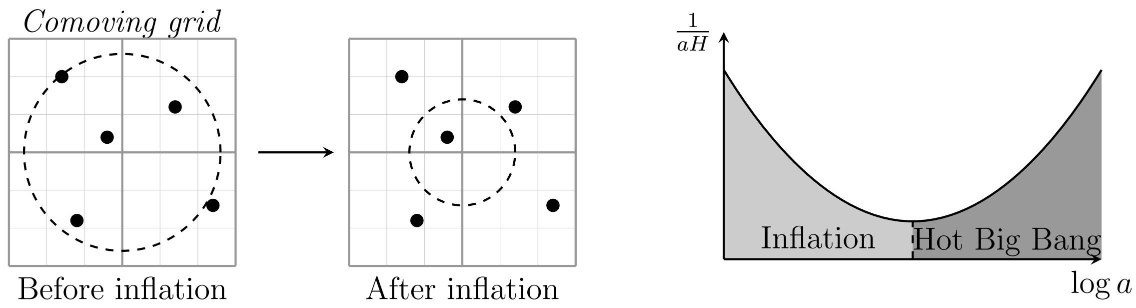
where we used that the distance between the two points is by definition the comoving particle horizon at recombination and that the distance between us and A corresponds to the distance travelled by the light we observe and which is emitted at recombination (Figure 3.1b). To compute this ratio we can approximate our universe to be made of only matter and radiation (as we can neglect the contribution from the vacuum dominated era) so that the Friedmann equation reads

$$H^2 = H_0^2\left(\Omega_{m,0}a^{-3} + \Omega_{r,0}a^{-4}\right) = H_0^2\Omega_{m,0}a^{-3}\left(1 + \frac{a_{\rm eq}}{a}\right),$$

where $a_{\rm eq} = \Omega_{r,0}/\Omega_{m,0} \approx 2.9 \times 10^{-4}$ is the scale factor at equality, which we computed in Section 1.2.3 This expression allows to compute an analytic formula for the particle horizon and of $\theta_{\rm max}$

$$\begin{aligned}
\tau(a) &= \int_0^a \frac{da'}{(a')^2 H(a')} = \int_0^a \frac{da'}{H_0\sqrt{\Omega_{m,0}}} \frac{1}{\sqrt{a' + a_{\rm eq}}} \\
&= \frac{2}{H_0\sqrt{\Omega_{m,0}}}\left(\sqrt{a' + a_{\rm eq}} - \sqrt{a_{\rm eq}}\right) \\
\Rightarrow \qquad \theta_{\rm max} &= \frac{\sqrt{a_{\rm rec} + a_{\rm eq}} - \sqrt{a_{\rm eq}}}{\sqrt{1 + a_{\rm eq}} - \sqrt{a_{\rm rec} + a_{\rm eq}}} \approx 1.82 \times 10^{-2} \equiv 1.04^\circ,
\end{aligned}$$

where we used that recombination occurs at $a_{\rm rec} \approx z_{\rm rec}^{-1} = 9.1 \times 10^{-4}$ and $a_0 = 1$. This results clearly shows that thermalization processes alone cannot have produced the homogeneity which the CMB displays over the whole sky. This inconsistency is known as the **flatness problem**.



(a) Comoving Hubble horizon (dashed) before and after inflation.

(b) Inflation contribution to the particle horizon.

Figure 3.2: Graphical representation of the ideas behind inflation. Figure (a) shows how the shrinking of the Hubble horizon separates points on the comoving grid. Figure (b) displays how inflation increases the total particle horizon, which corresponds to the shaded area under the graph of the comoving Hubble horizon.

To reconciliate theory predictions and observations we must deepen our insight on why the comoving particle horizon seems to be so small at recombination. Equation (3.1) can be rewritten, by a simple change of variable, as

$$\Delta r_{\max} \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \int_0^{a_*} \frac{d\log a}{aH},$$

this shows that the comoving particle horizon is the logarithmic integral of $1/aH$, which is also known as the **comoving Hubble horizon**. This new quantity, which we recognize to be just the inverse of $\dot{a}$, measures the distance that light can travel within an expansion of a factor e, also called *e-folding*, hence whether two points can communicate in the time the universe expands of a factor e. For both matter dominated ($H \propto a^{-3/2}$) and radiation dominated universe ($H \propto a^{-2}$) the Hubble horizon is increasing, therefore the main contribution to the particle horizon comes from the most recent epochs. This suggests that a way to increase the particle horizon can be to consider an initial period with a decreasing Hubble horizon, which therefore gives some large contributions at the earliest times. Such initial period, which corresponds to an accelerated expansion of the universe (recall $1/aH = 1/\dot{a}$), takes the name of **inflation**. Physically this approach solves the flatness problem in the following way: initially all the points in the Hubble horizon could communicate within a few e-folds of expansion, then inflation stretches these points apart, making some of them to exit the Hubble horizon. From the point of view of the comoving coordinates this happens because, while all the points are fixed, the comoving Hubble horizon is shrinking. After inflation, the points inside the Hubble horizon correspond just to a small patch of the initial one, which therefore could have been already thermalized.

3.2 Slow-roll inflation

We now know that a phase of accelerated expansion is required to solve the flatness problem, however we still don't know how this phase started and what kind of cosmic fluid drove it. At a first glance a vacuum dominated universe, which leads to De Sitter spacetime ($a(t) \propto e^{H_0 t}$), could seem a candidate, however we must consider that inflation has to be a temporary phase which ends with the beginning of the radiation dominated era. A vacuum dominated universe, since the density of vacuum is constant while the density of matter and radiation decrease as the universe expands, would be eternal. We conclude that De Sitter spacetime is not the appropriate solution, and we should look for a cosmic fluid that resemble vacuum during inflation but that can also behave differently, ending the inflationary phase.

To determine whether inflation, within a determined model, is taking place the **first slow-roll parameter** ϵ_1 is used: indeed we know that inflation occurs when the Hubble radius is shrinking, namely

$$0 > \frac{d}{dt}\frac{1}{aH} = -\frac{1}{a}\left[1+\frac{\dot{H}}{H^2}\right] \overset{\text{def}}{=} -1+\epsilon_1, \qquad \Rightarrow \qquad \epsilon_1 \overset{\text{def}}{=} -\frac{\dot{H}}{H^2} < 1. \tag{3.2}$$

The main advantage of the first slow-roll parameter is that we can evaluate it in a specific model that we want to study and identify the conditions for its inflationary dynamics. Note that this parameter also quantifies the departure from De Sitter spacetime (since for De Sitter $H = \text{const}$ and thus $\epsilon_1 = 0$).

At this point we have to consider which cosmic fluid drives inflation: the easiest fluid, and yet complex enough to give rise to inflationary dynamics, is a quantum scalar field, usually called **inflaton**. In general a quantum field $\phi(x)$ depends both on time and space, such scenario would spoil the symmetries of FRW metric and would require us to solve the full system of the Einstein equations coupled to the field. For this reason we assume that classically the field can be perturbatively expanded resulting in a background homogeneous field $\phi(t)$, plus some small perturbations $\delta\phi(t,\mathbf{x})$, that can be later described in the context of a cosmological perturbation theory (Section 4.1). In this way, the background inflation field determines the dynamics of inflation, and it is treated completely classically, while its perturbations will source anisotropies through quantum mechanisms. Starting from the action of the background inflaton field, with a generic potential, we can derive its equation of motion

$$\mathcal{S}[\phi] = \int d^4x\sqrt{-g}\left(\frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}^2(t) - V(\phi)\right) \qquad \Rightarrow \qquad \ddot{\phi} + 3H\dot{\phi} + \partial_\phi V(\phi) = 0, \tag{3.3}$$

and its energy-momentum tensor

$$T^{\mu}{}_{\nu} = \partial^\mu\phi\partial_\nu\phi + g^{\mu}{}_{\nu}\mathcal{L} = \begin{cases} T^0{}_0 = -\left(\frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}^2(t) + V(\phi)\right) \\ T^i{}_j = \left(\frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}^2(t) - V(\phi)\right)\delta^i{}_j \end{cases}. \tag{3.4}$$

By analogy with the energy-momentum tensor of a perfect fluid, we can compute the energy density ($\rho = -T^0{}_0$) and the pressure ($p = T^i{}_i/3$) associated to the inflaton field, which turn out to be respectively

$$\rho = \frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}^2(t) + V(\phi) \qquad \text{and} \qquad p = \frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}^2(t) - V(\phi). \tag{3.5}$$

By plugging the energy density of the inflaton in the Friedmann equation (1.17) we find

$$H^2 = \frac{8\pi G}{3}\left(\frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}^2(t) + V(\phi)\right), \tag{3.6}$$

which should be solved to determine the evolution of the scale factor. However, at this stage we are not interested into the full dynamics of the scale factor and the inflaton, but we just want to understand the conditions for which it occurs. As we know the first slow-roll parameter can be exploited to this end

$$\epsilon_1 = -\frac{\dot{H}}{H^2} = \frac{\frac{3}{2}\dot{\phi}^2}{\left(\frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}^2 + V(\phi)\right)} = \frac{4\pi G\dot{\phi}^2}{H^2}, \tag{3.7}$$

where we obtained the time derivative of the Hubble parameter by differentiating the Friedmann equation (3.6) in which we inserted the equation of motion (3.3)

$$2H\dot{H} = \frac{8\pi G}{3}\left(\dot{\phi}\ddot{\phi} + \partial_\phi V(\phi)\dot{\phi}\right) = -8\pi G H\dot{\phi}^2 \quad \Rightarrow \quad \dot{H} = -\frac{\dot{\phi}^2}{16\pi G}.$$

Form the slow-roll parameter we immediately note that inflation occurs when $\dot{\phi} \ll V(\phi)$. Note that in this limit the inflaton field behaves as vacuum

$$\omega \overset{\text{def}}{=} \frac{p}{\rho} = \frac{\frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}^2 - V(\phi)}{\frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}^2 + V(\phi)} \xrightarrow{\dot{\phi} \ll V(\phi)} -1,$$

and thus, as we expect, we recover an approximated version of De Sitter spacetime.

The slow-roll condition is not the only requirement which we should make; indeed, if the inflaton field was to meet the condition $\epsilon_1 < 1$ for short time, inflation would end too soon. We therefore also require, to maintain inflationary conditions, that ϵ_1 varies slowly: this is done by defining the **second slow-roll parameter**

$$\epsilon_2 \overset{\text{def}}{=} \frac{\dot{\epsilon}_1}{H\epsilon_1} = 2\frac{\ddot{\phi}}{\dot{\phi}H} - 2\frac{\dot{H}}{H^2}, \tag{3.8}$$

where we also computed its value for the scalar field model. This simple calculation shows that to maintain a slow-roll inflation also the condition $\ddot{\phi} \ll H\dot{\phi}$ should be satisfied. Indeed, imposing the above conditions, the equations of motion of the inflaton and of the scale factor reduce to

$$\dot{\phi} \approx -\frac{\partial_\phi V(\phi)}{3H}, \qquad H^2 \approx \frac{8\pi G}{3}V(\phi). \tag{3.9}$$

These two equations shows that the dynamics of slow-roll inflation is fully determined by the potential of the inflaton.

II

The inhomogeneous universe

Chapter 4

Cosmological perturbation theory

In the previous chapters we mentioned several times that anisotropies and inhomogeneities are observed in our universe giving us a lot of information about it (section 1.2.3). These deviations from the ideal homogeneous and isotropic FRW universe constitute tiny discrepancies (recall that for the CMB $\Delta T/T \approx 10^{-5}$) that can be studied as perturbations of the model we have built so far. Clearly, a cosmological perturbation theory should account both for perturbations of the universe content and of its metric at the same time. Indeed, in general relativity any energy perturbation would affect the metric, perturbing it, which then would influence the evolution of the former.
Starting from a background metric $\bar{g}_{\mu\nu}(t)$, which only depends on time, we can introduce its perturbations $\delta g_{\mu\nu}(t, \mathbf{x})$ as functions that we assume to be much smaller than the background and that also have some space dependence. Their dynamics is determined by plugging the perturbed metric in the Einstein field equations

$$\bar{G}_{\mu\nu} + \delta G_{\mu\nu} = 8\pi G\Big(\bar{T}_{\mu\nu} + \delta T_{\mu\nu}\Big),$$

where also the energy-momentum tensor has been perturbed for the reason we already explained. At this point the background part of the Einstein equations and the perturbed terms can be separated, since they do not mix at linear order, allowing to study first the background, which turns out to be just the Friedmann equations and thus gives FRW metric, and then its perturbations as a set of linear equations.

4.1 Metric and matter perturbations

To get simpler calculations, using conformal time, we can employ the following decomposition

$$g_{00} = -a^2(\tau)\Big[1 + 2A(\tau, \mathbf{x})\Big] \qquad \Rightarrow \qquad \delta g_{00} = -2a^2(\tau)A(\tau, \mathbf{x}), \tag{4.1}$$

$$g_{0i} = a^2(\tau)B_i(\tau, \mathbf{x}) \qquad \Rightarrow \qquad \delta g_{0i} = a^2(\tau)B_i(\tau, \mathbf{x}), \tag{4.2}$$

$$g_{ij} = a^2(\tau)\Big[\delta_{ij} + h_{ij}(\tau, \mathbf{x})\Big] \qquad \Rightarrow \qquad \delta g_{ij} = a^2(\tau)h_{ij}(\tau, \mathbf{x}). \tag{4.3}$$

Each non-scalar perturbation in the above can be then further decomposed by studying its momentum space representation: consider first the vector B_i, in momentum space a natural direction is determined by the wave number vector $\mathbf{k}$ so that B_i itself can be decomposed on such direction and on its orthogonal plane:

$$B_i(\tau, \mathbf{x}) = \int \frac{d^3k}{(2\pi)^3} e^{i\mathbf{k}\cdot\mathbf{x}}(ik_i\tilde{B}(\tau, \mathbf{k}) + \tilde{\hat{B}}_i(\tau, \mathbf{x})) = B_{,i}(\tau, \mathbf{k}) + \hat{B}_i(\tau, \mathbf{x}),$$

where we denoted with the hat the orthogonal components to $\mathbf{k}$. The above decomposition consists just in the split of the longitudinal, or irrotational, part $B_{,i}$ and the transverse, or solenoidal, part $\hat{B}_i$ of a generic vector field. Indeed, it's rather trivial to note that

$$\epsilon^{ijk}B_{,ij}(\tau, \mathbf{x}) = 0 \quad \text{and} \quad \hat{B}_i{}^{,i}(\tau, \mathbf{x}) \propto \int \frac{d^3k}{(2\pi)^3} e^{i\mathbf{k}\cdot\mathbf{x}} k^i \hat{B}_i(\tau, \mathbf{x}) = 0.$$

The same decomposition can be used for h_{ij}: first we can factor out the trace, the remaining tensor is then projected in Fourier space on the direction of $\mathbf{k}$ and on its orthogonal plane in all the possible combinations of its indices. In this way we find:

$$h_{ij}(\tau, \mathbf{x}) = -2C\delta_{ij} + 2E_{,ij} + \hat{E}_{i,j} + \hat{E}_{j,i} + \hat{E}^T_{ij},$$

where C and E are scalar fields, $\hat{E}_i$ is a transverse or solenoidal vector field while $\hat{E}^T_{ij}$ is a traceless transverse tensor.
Overall we found 10 fields which perfectly match the 10 degerees of freedom of the metric:

- A, B, C, E which are **scalar perturbations** with 1 degree of freedom each,
- $\hat{B}_i, \hat{E}_i$ which are **transverse vector perturbations**, thus with 2 degrees of freedom for each vector,
- $\hat{E}^T_{ij}$ which is a **traceless transverse tensor perturbation**, hence with just 2 degrees of freedom, and we recognize it to be a gravitational wave.

With the perturbed metric in our hands we can now study how the energy-momentum tensor of a perfect fluid gets perturbed. In the following discussion we will also generalize the universe content to an *imperfect fluid* such as a combination different weakly interacting fluids, hence its energy-momentum tensor will include terms that describe physically relevant processes between its different components, for example the shear and bulk viscosity or the thermal conductivity. We can incorporate all of these effects in the *shear stress* or *anisotropic stress* $\pi^{\mu\nu}$, so that the general form of the energy-momentum tensor reads

$$T^\mu{}_\nu = (\rho + p)U^\mu U_\nu + pg^\mu{}_\nu + \pi^\mu{}_\nu. \tag{4.4}$$

Without loss of generality we can assume that $\pi^{\mu\nu}$ is traceless and flow-orthogonal, namely $\pi^{\mu\nu}U_\nu = 0$ and $g_{\mu\nu}\pi^{\mu\nu} = 0$. Indeed, from the above equation we can see that any non-traceless or flow-parallel contribution can be refactored in the energy density and in the pressure of the perfect fluid. This corresponds physically to require that in the rest frame of the fluid any shear stress is purely spatial, hence it manifests as an anisotropic contribution to the pressure ($T^0{}_0 = \rho$, $T^0{}_i = 0$ and $T^i{}_j = pg^i{}_j + \pi^i{}_j$). We now have to introduce perturbations in the above energy-momentum tensor: considering that $\pi^{\mu\nu}$ is already a deviation from the isotropic and homogeneous FRW case, we can assume that it is small enough to be treated as a perturbation, hence we still have to perturb the 4-velocity of the fluid U^μ, the energy density and the pressure.

Starting from the 4-velcocity we assume that all its components could be perturbed, so that a small bulk velocity can appear ($U^i \neq 0$): overall we will let $U^\mu = (\bar{U}^0 + \delta U^0, \delta U^i)$, where $\bar{U}^0 \gg \delta U^0, \delta U^i$ has the background value a^{-1} that we get in the FRW case. Note that we can now define the bulk velocity of the fluid to be

$$v^i \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \frac{dx^i}{d\tau} = \frac{dx^i/d\lambda}{dx^0/d\lambda} = \frac{U^i}{U^0} = \frac{\delta U^i}{\bar{U}^0 + \delta U^0} \approx \frac{\delta U^i}{\bar{U}^0} = a\delta U^i.$$

The perturbation of the zeroth components can be found from the normalization condition which gives at first order

$$\begin{aligned} -1 = U^\mu U^\nu g_{\mu\nu} = U^0 U^0 g_{00} + 2U^0 U^i g_{0i} + U^i U^j g_{ij} \approx -1 + (\bar{U}^0)^2 \delta g_{00} - 2a^2 \bar{U}^0 \delta U^0 \\ \Rightarrow \quad U^0 = \frac{1}{a^3}\left(1 - \frac{1}{2}\delta g_{00}\right), \qquad U_0 = a^{-3}\left(1 + \frac{1}{2}\delta g_{00}\right), \end{aligned}$$

while the spatial components are

$$U^i = \frac{1}{a} v^i \quad \Rightarrow \quad U_i = g_{ij} U^j + g_{0i} U^0 \approx a\left(v_i + \frac{1}{a^2}\delta g_{0i}\right).$$

Let's stop for a moment to understand the physical meaning of this result: the zeroth component gets a perturbation that corresponds to the gravitational redshift of the energy of the fluid, while the spatial perturbation is the sum of a bulk velocity $\mathbf{v}$, that can arise due to the lack of isotropy, and a perturbation that we can interpret as the dragging of inertial frames at different velocities.
Similarly, also the energy density and the pressure get perturbed: considering their background values (those in FRW metric) $\bar{\rho}(t)$ and $\bar{p}(t)$ and some small deviations $\delta\rho(t, \mathbf{x})$ and $\delta p(t, \mathbf{x})$, we can write $\rho = \bar{\rho} + \delta\rho$ and $p = \bar{p} + \delta p$.
Plugging all the above perturbations in the energy-momentum tensor (4.4) and keeping only the first order terms (assuming that all the perturbations are comparable) we find

$$T^0{}_0 = (\rho + p) U^0 U_0 + p \approx -(\bar{\rho} + \delta\rho) \quad \Rightarrow \quad \delta T^0{}_0 = -\delta\rho, \tag{4.5}$$

$$T^i{}_0 = (\rho + p) U^i U_0 \approx -(\bar{\rho} + \bar{p}) v^i \quad \Rightarrow \quad \delta T^i{}_0 = (\bar{\rho} + \bar{p}) v^i, \tag{4.6}$$

$$T^0{}_i = (\rho + p) U^0 U_i \approx (\bar{\rho} + \bar{p})\left(v_i + \frac{1}{a^2}\delta g_{0i}\right) \quad \Rightarrow \quad \delta T^0{}_i = (\bar{\rho} + \bar{p})\left(v_i + \frac{1}{a^2}\delta g_{0i}\right), \tag{4.7}$$

$$T^i{}_j = (\rho + p) U^i U_j + p g^i{}_j + \pi^i{}_j \approx \bar{p}\delta^i{}_j + \pi^i{}_j \quad \Rightarrow \quad \delta T^i{}_j = \delta p \delta^i{}_j + \pi^i{}_j. \tag{4.8}$$

In this way we can come back to the perturbed Einstein equations and solve it separately for the background and for the perturbations.

4.2 Gauge transformations

The principle of general relativity states that the laws of physics are independent of the observer that describes them, hence they are independent of the coordinate that we use. In this section we will study how perturbations are influenced by a coordinate transformation. We will discover that the freedom of choice of the coordinates translates in a gauge freedom of the perturbations, reducing the number of degrees of freedom that are relevant.

Consider an infinitesimal coordinate transformation $x^\mu = \tilde{x}^\mu = x^\mu + \xi^\mu$, where ξ^μ is small vector field, comparable with the perturbations. This transformation will affect all the components of each tensor, in particular the metric will transform as

$$\tilde{g}_{\mu\nu}(\tilde{x}) = \frac{\partial x^\alpha}{\partial \tilde{x}^\mu}\frac{\partial x^\beta}{\partial \tilde{x}^\nu} g_{\alpha\beta}(x) = g_{\mu\nu}(x) - \frac{\partial \xi^\alpha}{\partial \tilde{x}^\mu} g_{\alpha\nu}(x) - \frac{\partial \xi^\beta}{\partial \tilde{x}^\nu} g_{\mu\beta}(x) + \mathcal{O}(\xi^2),$$

at this point it is useful to expand each term on the left-hand side around $\tilde{x}$, so that we get an expression depending only on the new coordinates $\tilde{x}^\mu$, which at first order reads:

$$\tilde{g}_{\mu\nu}(\tilde{x}) = g_{\mu\nu}(\tilde{x}) - \frac{\partial \xi^\alpha}{\partial \tilde{x}^\mu} g_{\alpha\nu}(\tilde{x}) - \frac{\partial \xi^\beta}{\partial \tilde{x}^\nu} g_{\mu\beta}(\tilde{x}) - \frac{\partial g_{\mu\nu}}{\partial \tilde{x}^\lambda}\xi^\lambda + \mathcal{O}(\xi^2).$$

Now we can separate the background and the perturbations and considering ξ^μ a first order perturbation we discover that the background metric remains unchanged, while each perturbation transforms as

$$\delta\tilde{g}_{\mu\nu}(\tilde{x}) = \delta g_{\mu\nu}(\tilde{x}) - \frac{\partial \xi^\alpha}{\partial \tilde{x}^\mu} \bar{g}_{\alpha\nu}(\tilde{x}) - \frac{\partial \xi^\beta}{\partial \tilde{x}^\nu} \bar{g}_{\mu\beta}(\tilde{x}) - \frac{\partial \bar{g}_{\mu\nu}}{\partial \tilde{x}^\lambda}\xi^\lambda + \mathcal{O}(\xi^2, \delta g^2). \tag{4.9}$$

The above transformation shows how the ten perturbation fields transforms under a change of coordinate. To better match the symmetries of the tensors we derived in the previous section, it is appropriate to decompose $\xi^\mu = (\xi^0, \zeta^{,i} + \xi^i_\perp)$ where ξ^0 and ζ are two scalars while $\xi^i_\perp$ is a transverse vector ($\xi^i_{\perp,i} = 0$).
The 00 component gives us the transformation of the scalar perturbation A:

$$\delta\tilde{g}_{00} = -2a^2\tilde{A} = \delta g_{00} = -2a^2 A + 2a^2(\xi^0)' + 2aa'\xi^0 \quad \Rightarrow \quad \boxed{\tilde{A} = A - \frac{1}{a}\frac{d}{d\tau}\left(a\xi^0\right)}, \tag{4.10}$$

where we used the $'$ to denote the derivative with respect to conformal time.
Similarly, the $0i$ components give us the transformation of the vector perturbation B_i:

$$\delta\tilde{g}_{0i} = a^2\tilde{B}_i = \delta g_{0i} = a^2 B_i - a^2\xi^j{}_{,0}\delta_{ij} + a^2\xi^0{}_{,i} \Rightarrow \quad \tilde{B}_i = B_i - \xi_i' + \xi^0{}_{,i}.$$

Decomposing both ξ^i and B_i in their longitudinal and transverse components we find

$$\tilde{B} = B - \zeta' + \xi^0, \qquad \tilde{\hat{B}}_i = \hat{B}_i - (\xi_{\perp i})'. \tag{4.11}$$

The same procedure goes for the ij components

$$\delta\tilde{g}_{ij} = a^2\tilde{h}_{ij} = \delta g_{ij} = a^2 h_{ij} - a^2\xi_{i,j} - a^2\xi_{j,i} - 2aa'\xi^0\delta_{ij},$$

again decomposing h_{ij} in its scalar, vector and tensor components and comparing with the components of ξ^μ we find obtain the transformations of the remaining fields:

$$\tilde{C} = C - \frac{a'}{a}\xi^0, \qquad \tilde{E} = E - \zeta, \tag{4.12}$$

$$\tilde{\hat{E}}_i = \hat{E}_i - \xi_{\perp i}, \qquad \tilde{\hat{E}}^T_{ij} = \hat{E}^T_{ij}. \tag{4.13}$$

Let's stop for a moment to appreciate that the tensor perturbation is the only invariant perturbation under a change of coordinates. Other gauge invariant perturbations can be constructed from the above ones. For example writing the gauge parameters ζ and ξ^0 in terms of the perturbations,

$$\zeta = E - \tilde{E}, \qquad \xi^0 = \tilde{B} - B + (E - \tilde{E})',$$

a gauge invariant scalar perturbation can be obtained; by plugging ξ^0 in the transformation of A and by rearranging the terms we find:

$$\tilde{A} + \frac{1}{a}(a\tilde{E}' - a\tilde{B})' = A + \frac{1}{a}(aE' - aB)',$$

which shows that $\Phi_A \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} A + \frac{1}{a}(aE' - aB)'$ is gauge invariant. Similarly, one can show that $\Phi_H \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} -C + \frac{a'}{a}(B - E')$ is gauge invariant too. These two gauge invariant variables are called *Bardeen variables*: note that these two variables represent the "real" (they are not coordinate artifacts) spacetime perturbations, since they cannot be removed by any change of coordinate.

Previously we argued that matter perturbations $\delta T_{\mu\nu}$ are related to the metric perturbations, therefore also this kind of perturbations possess the same gauge freedom. To begin let's focus on the energy density and the pressure: under the transformation $\tilde{x}^\mu = x^\mu + \xi^\mu$ since they are scalars they won't transform, however the infinitesimal coordinate shift implies

$$\tilde{\rho}(\tilde{x}) = \rho(x) = \rho(\tilde{x}) - \xi^\mu \partial_\mu \rho(\tilde{x}) + \mathcal{O}(\xi^2).$$

By separating the background and the perturbed energy density and assuming that ξ^μ is comparable with $\delta\rho$, we discover again that the background energy density remains unchanged, while the perturbed one transforms as

$$\delta\tilde{\rho} = \delta\rho - \xi^0 \bar{\rho}'.$$

Analogously, pressure perturbations transform in the same way.
This immediately gives us the transformation for the 00 component of the energy-momentum tensor (4.5):

$$\delta\tilde{T}_{00} = -\delta\rho + \xi^0\bar{\rho}' = \delta T_{00} + \xi^0 \bar{\rho}'.$$

To obtain the transformation of the other components we can use directly the transformation law of the energy-momentum tensor and then expand the old coordinates in terms of the new:

$$\begin{aligned}
\tilde{T}^\mu{}_\nu(\tilde{x}) &= \frac{\partial\tilde{x}^\mu}{\partial x^\alpha}\frac{\partial x^\beta}{\partial \tilde{x}^\nu} T^\alpha{}_\beta(x) = T^\mu{}_\nu(x) + \xi^\mu{}_{,\alpha} T^\alpha{}_\nu(x) - \xi^\beta{}_{,\nu} T^\mu{}_\beta(x) + \mathcal{O}(\xi^2) \\
&= T^\mu{}_\nu(\tilde{x}) + \xi^\mu{}_{,\alpha} T^\alpha{}_\nu(\tilde{x}) - \xi^\beta{}_{,\nu} T^\mu{}_\beta(\tilde{x}) + T^\mu{}_{\nu,\lambda}(\tilde{x})\xi^\lambda + \mathcal{O}(\xi^2).
\end{aligned}$$

Again by separating the background and the perturbed parts of energy-momentum tensor we find that the background part remains unchanged, while the perturbed part gets transformed as

$$\delta\tilde{T}^\mu{}_\nu = \delta T^\mu{}_\nu + \xi^\mu{}_{,\alpha}\bar{T}^\alpha{}_\nu - \xi^\beta{}_{,\nu}\bar{T}^\mu{}_\beta + \bar{T}^\mu{}_{\nu,\lambda}\xi^\lambda.$$

Note that from here we could have obtained the transformation of the 00 component as well. The $i0$ perturbations transform as

$$\begin{aligned}
\delta\tilde{T}^i{}_0 &= -(\bar{\rho} + \bar{p})\tilde{v}^i \\
&= \delta T^i{}_0 + \xi^i{}_{,\alpha}\bar{T}^\alpha{}_0 - \xi^\beta{}_{,0}\bar{T}^i{}_\beta + \bar{T}^i{}_{0,\lambda}\xi^\lambda + \ 2^{nd} \text{ order terms} \\
&= -(\bar{\rho} + \bar{p})v^i - \bar{\rho}(\xi^i)' - \bar{p}\delta^i{}_j(\xi^j)' + \ 2^{nd} \text{ order terms} \\
&= -(\bar{\rho} + \bar{p})[v^i + (\xi^i)'],
\end{aligned}$$

which ultimately shows that $\tilde{v}^i = v^i + (\xi^i)'$ is the transformation of the bulk velocity.
The ij components instead transform as

$$\begin{aligned}
\delta\tilde{T}^i{}_j &= \delta\tilde{p}\delta^i{}_j + \tilde{\pi}^i{}_j \\
&= \delta T^i{}_j + \xi^i{}_{,\alpha}\bar{T}^\alpha{}_j - \xi^\beta{}_{,j}\bar{T}^i{}_\beta + \bar{T}^i{}_{j,\lambda}\xi^\lambda \\
&= \delta p\delta^i{}_j + \pi^i{}_j + \bar{p}\xi^{i,j} - \bar{p}\xi^{i,j} + \bar{\rho}'\xi^0 \\
&= \delta p\delta^i{}_j + \pi^i{}_j + \bar{\rho}'\xi^0,
\end{aligned}$$

where we recognize the transformation of the pressure perturbation, hence showing that the shear stress π^{ij} is gauge invariant.
Now that we know how the matter perturbations transform under an infinitesimal change of coordinate, we can try again to build a new gauge invariant variable. Assuming that the bulk velocity is an irrotational field, and thus it can be expressed as the gradient of a scalar field v, we can write its transformation as $\tilde{v} = v + \zeta'$, hence we can express ζ' as a function of v. Exploiting that $\tilde{B} = B - \zeta' + \xi^0$ we can write ξ^0 as a function of B and v which can be then substituted in the transformation of C to get:

$$\tilde{C} + \frac{a'}{a}(\tilde{B} + \tilde{v}) = C + \frac{a'}{a}(B + v),$$

which shows that the variable $\mathcal{R} \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} C + \frac{a'}{a}(B + v)$, called *comoving curvature perturbation* is gauge invariant.

4.2.1 Gauge choice

Having studied the gauge transformations of cosmological perturbations, it is now time to understand how to properly exploit this freedom to simplify our calculations. Our previous discussion already shows that in order to study tensor perturbations there is no gauge choice to make, since they are already gauge invariant. Vector perturbations, instead, are not excited during inflation, hence we will focus on scalar perturbations.

- The first gauge choice we present is the **Newtonian gauge**: this is defined by the condition that the fields B and E vanish identically. This is accomplished by an infinitesimal change of coordinates with $\zeta = E$ and $\xi^0 = E' - B$, which sets $\tilde{E} = \tilde{B} = 0$. The perturbed metric in this way reads

$$ds^2 = a^2(\tau)\Big[-(1 + 2\Psi)d\tau^2 + (1 - 2\Phi)\delta_{ij}dx^i dx^j\Big], \tag{4.14}$$

  where we redefined $\Psi \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} A$ and $\Phi \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} -C$ and no other scalar perturbation is required to fully describe the system. This gauge choice is particularly important since it makes the metric diagonal, allowing to have geodesic motion orthogonal to constant time hypersufaces and simplifying many calculations. Furthermore, the form of the metric allows recognizing Ψ as the gravitational potential that appears in the weak field limit of general relativity. Lastly, it is very important to note that by imposing $B = E = 0$, the two Bardeen variables reduces to Ψ and Φ, showing that this gauge choice automatically removes all the coordinate artifacts that could be confused with perturbations.

- Another convenient gauge choice is the **spatially flat gauge**, defined by $C = E = 0$. This condition removes any scalar perturbation from the spatial part of the metric, however in this case we are left with a non-diagonal metric which is not convenient in many calculations.

- Historically introduced by Lifshitz as one of the first gauge choices, the **synchronous gauge** is defined by the condition $A = B = 0$. However, this gauge presents many complications that led to the development of the Newtonian gauge.

- As we already discussed, also matter perturbations are affected by infinitesimal coordinate transformations, this implies that some gauge choice are available also by imposing conditions on the energy-momentum tensor. The main gauge choice of this kind is the **comoving gauge**, defined by the condition $\delta T^0_{\ i} = 0$, physically corresponds to the choice of the comoving reference frame with respect to the perturbed cosmic fluid. The above condition corresponds to

$$0 = \delta T^0_{\ i} = (\bar{\rho} + \bar{p})(v_i + B_i),$$

that assuming an irrotational bulk velocity translates into $B + v = 0$. In this gauge we are allowed to impose an extra condition since $B + v = 0$ is achieved just by using ξ^0, hence we are still free to use ζ to set $E = 0$. In this way the only purely spatial scalar perturbation that remains is $\mathcal{R}$. Moreover, studying the equation of motion for A and B, one can show that these become auxiliary fields which can be expressed as combinations of other perturbations or background fields. In this way the only relevant scalar perturbation to be studied in this gauge is just the comoving curvature $\mathcal{R}$.

4.3 Initial conditions

In the previous sections we described how to build the perturbation theory that can capture the evolution of anisotropies which we observe in our universe. Even though we still haven't derived the equation of motion for these, we already explained that they are given by the perturbed Einstein field equations. In the end these result in a system of linear differential equations that, in order to be solved, needs a set of initial conditions. We will see that initial conditions are given by inflation (which however was theorized in order to solve other problems in the *hot big bang model*) by exploiting the quantum fluctuations of the vacuum on a curved background.

Even though we still don't know the origin of such conditions, we can classify them. The most important one is the **adiabatic initial condition**, which corresponds to the requirement that initially all the components of the cosmic fluid do not exchange heat among themselves. How this requirement gives an initial condition can be understood just by considering the *first law of thermodynamics* in a small volume of fluid:

$$TdS_i = dU_i + p_i dV = \rho_i dV + V d\rho_i + p_i dV \quad \Rightarrow \quad T\frac{dS_i}{V} = d\rho_i + (\rho_i + p_i)\frac{dV}{V},$$

where the subscript i indicates that we are considering the thermodynamical variable of one component of the cosmic fluid. Given the assumption that $dS_i = 0$ for all components and since the volume and its variation is the same for all, the above relation tells us that the ratio $\frac{\rho_i}{\rho_i+p_i}$ is the same for all the spices. Furthermore, assuming that the usual equation of state ($p = \omega\rho$) holds and approximating the $\delta\rho \approx d\rho$, we find

$$\frac{\delta\rho_i}{\rho_i}\frac{1}{1+\omega_i} = \frac{\delta\rho_j}{\rho_j}\frac{1}{1+\omega_j} \qquad \text{for all } i, j.$$

In the ΛCDM model we have mainly four components: photons and neutrinos, with $\omega = 1/3$, cold dark matter and regular matter, with $\omega = 0$. In this case the adiabatic condition translates into

$$\frac{\delta\rho_\gamma}{\rho_\gamma} = \frac{\delta\rho_\nu}{\rho_\nu} = \frac{4}{3}\frac{\delta\rho_{\text{CDM}}}{\rho_{\text{CDM}}} = \frac{4}{3}\frac{\delta\rho_{\text{b}}}{\rho_{\text{b}}}, \tag{4.15}$$

which allows obtaining all the initial conditions from just one matter perturbation.

Other conditions, such as the **isocurvature initial conditions**, exits but both theoretically and observationally they seem to be less relevant than the adiabatic one. Indeed, the most simple models of inflation shows a good agreement with this kind of conditions, mainly because its dynamics in a single patch of universe it is fully determined by just one inflaton field. Moreover, current observation of the CMB further confirm the validity of the adiabatic initial condition.

4.4 Primordial perturbations

As we mentioned, the initial conditions of the perturbations are determined by inflation. In the followinf sections we will discover that perturbations naturally arise from quantum mechanics in curved spacetime as the inflaton field dominates the universe. The accelerated inflationary expansion stretched these perturbations from the quantum scale to the Hubble scale where, as we will see, they freeze and become classical. Then transitioning to the radiation dominated era the pertirbations start to renter the Hublle horizon, where they start to evolve again. In this way the initial conditions are determined by the perturbations at the Hubble scale during inflation.

4.4.1 Scalar perturbations during inflation

In Chapter 3 we developed the general framework that describes inflation: this was done by assuming that the inflaton can be described as a quantum fields which is totally homogeneous and depends only on the time variable. In this section we will allow for perturbation to introduce a space dependece in the inflaton field. As usual we will split the filed in its backgorund component $\bar{\phi}(\tau)$ plus some small perturbation $\delta\phi(\tau, \mathbf{x})$.

The starting point is the action of a scalar field, minimally coupled to gravity

$$\mathcal{S}[g,\phi] = -\int d^4x\sqrt{-g}\left(\frac{1}{2}\partial_\mu\phi\partial^\mu\phi + V(\phi) - \frac{R}{16\pi G}\right),$$

where R is the Ricci scalar. Since we want to study inhomogeneities, we perturb both the metric, in the way we explained in Section 4.1, and the inflaton field, which now is our universe content. Let us stop for a moment and consider the perturbed energy-momentum tensor of the inflaton: expanding at the first order in all perturbations we find

$$T^0_{\ i} = \partial^\mu\phi\partial_\nu\phi + g^0_{\ i}\mathcal{L} = -a^{-2}\bar{\phi}'\delta\phi_{,i},$$

where we used the perturbed metric with conformal time in the Newtonian gauge. This shows that the comoving gauge ($\delta T^0_{\ i} = 0$) corresponds to the reference frame in which the inflaton is unperturbed $\delta\phi = 0$. Using the ADM formalism one can show that, in this gauge, scalar perturbations are parametrized only by the comoving curvature $\mathcal{R}$, despite the metric still containing A and B:

$$ds^2 = -a^2(1+2A)d\tau^2 + 2a^2B_{,i}d\tau dx^i + a^2(1-2\mathcal{R})\delta_{ij}dx^i dx^j.$$

Indeed, as we already explained in Section 4.2.1 these two last fields reduce to auxiliary fields. For these reasons we fix the comoving gauge from now on.
Through the ADM formalism one can also show that the above action, at the second order reads

$$\mathcal{S}_2[\mathcal{R}] = \frac{1}{2}\int d^4x a^4\left(\frac{\bar{\phi}'}{a'}\right)^2\Big[(\mathcal{R}')^2 - (\mathcal{R}_{,i})^2\Big]. \tag{4.16}$$

Even though $\mathcal{R}$ has many useful proprieties, it is immediately clear that it is not the canonical variable of this system and, since we aim to quantize these fields, we must find a proper canonical one. The appropriate choice is the so-called **Mukhanov-Sasaki variable**

$$\sigma \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} z\mathcal{R}, \quad \text{with } z \stackrel{\text{def}}{=\!=} a^2\frac{\bar{\phi}'}{a'} = a^2\frac{\dot{\bar{\phi}}}{\dot{a}} = a\frac{\dot{\bar{\phi}}}{H}, \tag{4.17}$$

that with some simple algebra turns the previous action into

$$\mathcal{S}_2[\sigma] - \frac{1}{2}\int d^4x\Big[(\sigma')^2 + \frac{z''}{z}\sigma^2 - (\sigma_i)^2\Big]. \tag{4.18}$$

Euler-Lagrange equations then give the **Mukhanov-Sasaki equation**

$$\sigma'' - \left(\boldsymbol{\nabla}^2\sigma + \frac{z''}{z}\right)\sigma = 0, \tag{4.19}$$

which we can recognize to be the Klein-Gordon equation with an effective time-dependent mass $m_{\text{eff}} = -z''/z$.

We are now interested in quantizing the Mukhanov-Sasaki variable: the similarity between the Minkowskian Klein-Gordon equation and equation (4.19) allows for a similar procedure to be followed. First we compute the conjugate momentum, $\pi = \partial\mathcal{L}/\partial\sigma' = \sigma'$, which will be then promoted to be an operator by imposing canonical commutation relations

$$[\hat{\sigma}(\tau,\mathbf{x}), \hat{\sigma}'(\tau,\mathbf{y})] = i\delta^{(3)}(\mathbf{x}-\mathbf{y}), \qquad [\hat{\sigma}(\tau,\mathbf{x}), \hat{\sigma}(\tau,\mathbf{y})] = [\hat{\sigma}'(\tau,\mathbf{x}), \hat{\sigma}'(\tau,\mathbf{y})] = 0.$$

More in detail, this is accomplished by studying equation (4.19) in Fourier space, where it reads

$$\tilde{\sigma}''_{\mathbf{k}} + \left(\mathbf{k}^2 - \frac{z''}{z}\right)\tilde{\sigma}_{\mathbf{k}} = 0,$$

then the Fourier coefficient of each mode is promoted to an operator. Note that $\sigma_{\mathbf{k}}$ depends only on the modulus of $\mathbf{k}$, hence we will drop the bold notation to signal this dependence. In this way the whole quantum field will read

$$\hat{\sigma}(\tau\,\mathbf{x}) = \int \frac{d^3k}{(2\pi)^3}\left[\hat{a}_{\mathbf{k}}\tilde{\sigma}_k(\tau)e^{i\mathbf{k}\cdot\mathbf{x}} + \hat{a}^{\dagger}_{\mathbf{k}}\tilde{\sigma}^*_k(\tau)e^{-i\mathbf{k}\cdot\mathbf{x}}\right],$$

where the different signs in the exponentials are due to the requirement that $\hat{\sigma}^{\dagger} = \hat{\sigma}$, as $\sigma \in \mathbb{R}$ before the quantization, and both $\tilde{\sigma}_k$ and $\tilde{\sigma}_k*$ are included since they are linearly independent solutions. The operator $\hat{a}_{\mathbf{k}}$ and $\hat{a}^{\dagger}_{\mathbf{k}}$ are called **creation and annihilation operators** and they are defined through the commutation relations

$$[\hat{a}_{\mathbf{k}}, \hat{a}^{\dagger}_{\mathbf{k}'}] = (2\pi)\delta^{(3)}(\mathbf{k}-\mathbf{k}'), \quad [\hat{a}_{\mathbf{k}}, \hat{a}_{\mathbf{k}'}] = [\hat{a}^{\dagger}_{\mathbf{k}}, \hat{a}^{\dagger}_{\mathbf{k}'}] = 0.$$

These relations allow obtaining the canonical commutation relations precisely if the following normalization holds

$$\langle\sigma_k, \sigma_k\rangle = i(\tilde{\sigma}^*_k\tilde{\sigma}'_k - (\tilde{\sigma}^*_k)'\tilde{\sigma}_k) = 1$$

$$\begin{aligned}
[\hat{\sigma}(\tau,\mathbf{x}), \hat{\sigma}'(\tau,\mathbf{y})] &= \int \frac{d^3k}{(2\pi)^3}\frac{d^3k'}{(2\pi)^3}\Big([\hat{a}_{\mathbf{k}}, \hat{a}^{\dagger}_{\mathbf{k}'}]\tilde{\sigma}_k(\tilde{\sigma}^*)'_{k'}e^{i(\mathbf{k}\cdot\mathbf{x}-\mathbf{k}'\cdot\mathbf{y})} + [\hat{a}^{\dagger}_{\mathbf{k}}, \hat{a}_{\mathbf{k}'}]\tilde{\sigma}^*_k\tilde{\sigma}'_k e^{-i(\mathbf{k}\cdot\mathbf{x}-\mathbf{k}'\cdot\mathbf{y})}\Big) \\
&= -\int \frac{d^3k}{(2\pi)^3}e^{i\mathbf{k}\cdot(\mathbf{x}-\mathbf{y})}(\tilde{\sigma}^*_k\tilde{\sigma}'_k - (\tilde{\sigma}^*_k)'\tilde{\sigma}_k) = i\delta^{(3)}(\mathbf{x}-\mathbf{y}).
\end{aligned}$$

Lastly, quantum states are defined by the action of the creation and annihilation operators: first the vacuum state $|0\rangle$, then 1-particle states $|1_{\mathbf{k}}\rangle$ and so on:

$$|0\rangle \text{ such that } \hat{a}_{\mathbf{k}}|0\rangle = 0\ \forall\mathbf{k}, \qquad |1_{\mathbf{k}}\rangle \overset{\text{def}}{=} \hat{a}^{\dagger}_{\mathbf{k}}|0\rangle\,. \tag{4.20}$$

Notice that this whole construction is not unique as the basis of solutions of the Mukhanov-Sasaki equation is not unique: indeed the lack of the symmetries, such as the Poincare Group, prevents us to recognize a preferred basis (in contrary to what happens in flat spacetime with normal modes). Different basis are connected by *Bogoliubov transformations* (a detailed treatment of quantum field theory in curved spacetime can be found in [2]), which also link the different quantum field theories that correspond to each basis. The choice of the appropriate basis is fundamental to describe the right quantum field theory: in our case we will study the limit in which the curvature of spacetime is negligible and require that there the Minkowski construction is recovered. This choice will give us the so-called **Bunch-Davies** modes and its associated vacuum state $|0_{\text{BD}}\rangle$.

To conclude our quantum approach to inflation we want to study the observable that emerge from the quantum mechanical operators. Trivially, we can observe that the expectation value of the Mukhanov-Sasaki variable, for the vacuum state, is zero:

$$\langle 0_{\text{BD}}|\hat{\tilde{\sigma}}_{\mathbf{k}}|0_{\text{BD}}\rangle = \langle 0_{\text{BD}}|\hat{a}_{\mathbf{k}}\tilde{\sigma}_k + \hat{a}^{\dagger}_{-\mathbf{k}}\tilde{\sigma}^*_{-k}|0_{\text{BD}}\rangle = 0.$$

On the other hand, its variance is non-zero and it is given by the so-called **power spectrum**:

$$\begin{aligned}
&\langle 0_{\text{BD}}|\hat{\tilde{\sigma}}_{\mathbf{k}}\hat{\tilde{\sigma}}_{\mathbf{k}'}|0_{\text{BD}}\rangle = \\
&\quad = \langle 0_{\text{BD}}|\hat{a}_{\mathbf{k}}\hat{a}_{\mathbf{k}'}\tilde{\sigma}_k\tilde{\sigma}_{k'} + \hat{a}_{\mathbf{k}}\hat{a}^{\dagger}_{-\mathbf{k}'}\tilde{\sigma}_k\tilde{\sigma}^*_{k'} + \hat{a}^{\dagger}_{-\mathbf{k}}\hat{a}_{\mathbf{k}'}\tilde{\sigma}^*_{-k}\tilde{\sigma}_{k'} + \hat{a}^{\dagger}_{-\mathbf{k}}\hat{a}^{\dagger}_{-\mathbf{k}'}\tilde{\sigma}_{-k}\tilde{\sigma}^*_{-k'}|0_{\text{BD}}\rangle \\
&\quad = \langle 0_{\text{BD}}|\hat{a}_{\mathbf{k}}\hat{a}^{\dagger}_{-\mathbf{k}'}|0_{\text{BD}}\rangle\,\tilde{\sigma}_k\tilde{\sigma}^*_{k'} = |\tilde{\sigma}_k|^2\delta^{(3)}(\mathbf{k}+\mathbf{k}') \overset{\text{def}}{=} \mathcal{P}_\sigma(k)\delta^{(3)}(\mathbf{k}+\mathbf{k}').
\end{aligned}$$

Physically this means that during inflation the scalar perturbations, even if not present in the first place, can be sourced by vacuum fluctuations. In this way we manage to build initial conditions for the perturbed Einstein equations that we previously discussed.

At this point the only thing that remains to be found are the Bunch-Davies modes. First, we should find solutions for the Mukhanov-Sasaki equation in momentum space, for which the background evolution of inflation must be known. In the following we will work with slow-roll inflation but in general more complex models can be used. As we already noted equation (4.19) contains an effective mass $-z''/z$ which is time dependent, hence to find its solution this dependence must be addressed. Using equation (3.7),

$$\epsilon_1 = 4\pi G\frac{\dot{\bar{\phi}}^2}{H^2} \qquad \Rightarrow \qquad z \overset{\text{def}}{=} a\frac{\dot{\bar{\phi}}}{H} = a\sqrt{\frac{\epsilon_1}{4\pi G}},$$

and differentiating twice z, with some simple algebra the effective mass can be express as a function of the slow-roll parameters:

$$z' = aHz\left(1+\frac{\epsilon_2}{2}\right), \quad z'' = z(aH)^2\left(2-\epsilon_1+\frac{3}{2}\epsilon_2-\epsilon_1\epsilon_2+\frac{(\epsilon_2)^2}{4}+\frac{\epsilon_2\epsilon_3}{2}\right),$$

where $\epsilon_i \overset{\text{def}}{=} \dot{\epsilon}_{i-1}/(H\epsilon_{i-1})$ for $i \geq 2$. Then, considering that inflation occurs in quasi-De Sitter spacetime, we can approximate the factor $(aH)^2$ in the following way

$$\frac{d}{d\tau}\frac{1}{aH} = \epsilon_1 - 1 \quad \Rightarrow \quad aH \approx \frac{1}{\tau(\epsilon_1-1)} \approx -\frac{1}{\tau}(1+\epsilon_1),$$

Plugging these results in the Mukhanov-Sasaki equation and introducing ν we can write

$$\tilde{\sigma}_k'' + \left[\mathbf{k}^2 - \frac{1}{\tau^2}\left(\nu^2-\frac{1}{4}\right)\right]\tilde{\sigma}_k = 0, \quad \text{where} \quad \nu^2 \overset{\text{def}}{=} \frac{9}{4}+3\epsilon_1+\frac{3}{2}\epsilon_2, \tag{4.21}$$

where we only kept terms at the first order in the slow-roll parameters. The solutions to this equation are the *Hankel functions* of the first kind $H_\nu^{(1)}$ and of the second kind $H_\nu^{(2)}$, so that in general

$$\tilde{\sigma}_k(\tau) = \sqrt{-\tau}\left(C_1 H_\nu^{(1)}(-k\tau) + C_2 H_\nu^{(2)}(-k\tau)\right),$$

which is defined up to the two constants C_1 and C_2. The Bunch-Davies condition gives us a way to determine these coefficients: modes whose wavelengths are much smaller than comoving Hubble horizon, $\mathbf{k}^2 \gg 1/\tau^2 \approx (aH)^2$, experience flat Minkowski spacetime since the curvature of spacetime becomes negligible. Indeed, in this limit the modes are expected to behave as in flat Minkowski spacetime as the equation (4.21) reduces to Klein-Gordon. Physically this corresponds to an early-time limit, in which inflation has still not stretched the perturbations outside the Hubble horizon. Considering $k\tau \to -\infty$ the Hankel functions can be approximated as

$$H_\nu^{(1)}(x) \xrightarrow{x\to\infty} \sqrt{\frac{2}{\pi x}}e^{i\left(x-\frac{\pi}{2}\nu-\frac{\pi}{4}\right)}, \qquad H_\nu^{(2)}(x) \xrightarrow{x\to\infty} \sqrt{\frac{2}{\pi x}}e^{-i\left(x-\frac{\pi}{2}\nu-\frac{\pi}{4}\right)},$$

which shows that the Bunch-Davies condition is satisfied if

$$\lim_{k\tau\to-\infty}\tilde{\sigma}_k = \frac{e^{ik\tau}}{\sqrt{2k}} \qquad \Longleftrightarrow \qquad C_1 = 0 \text{ and } C_2 = \sqrt{\frac{\pi}{4}}.$$

We conclude that the right modes to use are

$$\tilde{\sigma}_k(\tau) = \sqrt{-\tau}\sqrt{\frac{\pi}{4}}H_\nu^{(2)}(-k\tau). \tag{4.22}$$

The so-called **sub Hubble horizon regime** $k^2 \gg (aH)^2$ has just been exploited to find the Bunch-Davies modes; its opposite limit $k^2 \ll (aH)^2$ is called **super Hubble horizon regime**, and physically it corresponds to a late-time limit in which many modes have been already stretched outside the Hubble horizon. In this limit equation (4.21) reduces to a much simpler form, that by neglecting the slow-roll parameters reads

$$\tilde{\sigma}_k'' - \frac{2}{\tau^2}\tilde{\sigma}_k = 0 \quad \xrightarrow{\text{ansatz } \tilde{\sigma}_k \propto \tau^p} \quad \tilde{\sigma}_k = \frac{C_1}{\tau} + C_2\tau^2.$$

However σ is not a metric perturbation and, to obtain a physical quantity, $\mathcal{R}$ should be considered. Recalling that $\sigma = \mathcal{R}z$ and using the expression for z' we derived, we find that the comoving curvature perturbation at the super Hubble horizon scale become frozen and stops evolving:

$$z' \approx zaH \approx -\frac{z}{\tau} \quad \Rightarrow \quad z(\tau) \approx \frac{1}{\tau} \quad \Rightarrow \quad \tilde{\mathcal{R}}_k \approx C_1 + C_2\tau \xrightarrow{\tau\to 0} C_1,$$

where the last limit is exactly the super Hubble horizon regime $aH \to \infty$. Hence, the only information that we will need to obtain the initial condition for cosmological perturbations is the power spectrum in the late-time limit, which, until the modes reenter the Hubble horizion, is time independent.

For these reasons we will not study the power spectrum of σ but rather the one of the comoving curvature $\mathcal{R}$, which is:

$$\mathcal{P}_\mathcal{R}(k) = \frac{\mathcal{P}_\sigma}{z^2} = \frac{|\sigma_k|^2}{z^2} = -\tau 8\pi G\frac{\pi}{8a^2\epsilon_1}|H_\nu^{(2)}(-k\tau)|^2,$$

where we used that $z = a\sqrt{\epsilon_1/(4\pi G)}$. In the super Hubble horizon limit the Hankel function can be approximated as

$$|H_\nu^{(2)}|^2 \xrightarrow{k\tau\to 0} \frac{2^{2\nu}\Gamma^2(\nu)}{\pi^2}(-k\tau)^{-2\nu} \xrightarrow{\nu\approx 3/2} \frac{2}{\pi}\left(\frac{k}{aH}\right)^{-2\nu},$$

where Γ is the gamma function and $\Gamma^2(3/2) \approx \pi/2$ while $\tau \approx -(aH)^{-1}$. In this way the power spectrum reads

$$\mathcal{P}_\mathcal{R}(k) = 8\pi G\frac{H^2}{4\epsilon_1(aH)^3}\left(\frac{k}{aH}\right)^{-2\nu}, \tag{4.23}$$

This quantity is usually expressed as the **dimensionless power spectrum**

$$\Delta_\mathcal{R}(k) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \frac{k^3}{2\pi^2}\mathcal{P}_\mathcal{R}(k) = 8\pi G\frac{H^2}{8\pi^2\epsilon_1}\left(\frac{k}{aH}\right)^{3-2\nu}. \tag{4.24}$$

4.4.2 Tensor perturbations during inflation

Following the same ideas that guided us in the previous section, we shall now study the dynamics of the tensor perturbations $\hat{E}_{ij}^T$ during inflation. Since we are going to consider only tensor modes, we will use h_{ij} to denote transverse traceless perturbations of the spatial components of the metric. While studying these perturbations, scalar perturbations (since overall perturbation theory gives a system of linear PDE) are decoupled and thus an action only for h_{ij} can be considered. Starting from the Hilbert-Einstein action the ADM formalism can be used to obtain

$$\mathcal{S}[h_{ij}] = \frac{1}{64\pi G}\int d^4x a^2\Big[(h'_{ij})^2 - (h_{ij,k})^2\Big] = \frac{1}{64\pi G}\sum_{\lambda=+,\times}\int d^4x a^2\Big[(h'_{(\lambda)})^2 - (h_{(\lambda),k})^2\Big], \tag{4.25}$$

where we used the decomposition of gravitational waves in their two polarizations (the detail of the propagation of gravitational waves will be explained in Section 5.1)

$$h_{ij} = \sum_{\lambda=+,\times} h_{(\lambda)}\boldsymbol{\epsilon}^{\lambda}_{ij} \qquad \text{with } \boldsymbol{\epsilon}^{\lambda}_{ij}\boldsymbol{\epsilon}^{\lambda}_{ij} = 1.$$

The above action shows that also in this case $h^{(\lambda)}$ is not the canonical variable of this system: it is easy to note that the right canonical variable is $\sigma_{(\lambda)} \overset{\text{def}}{=} ah_{(\lambda)}/(2\sqrt{2\pi G})$ and with some little algebra the above action becomes

$$\mathcal{S}[h_{ij}] = \frac{1}{2}\sum_{\lambda=+,\times}\int d^4x\Big[(\sigma'_{(\lambda)})^2 + \frac{a''}{a}\sigma^2_{(\lambda)} - (\sigma_{(\lambda),k})^2\Big], \tag{4.26}$$

which we recognize to be exactly the Mukhanov-Sasaki action (4.18) but with an effective mass that now is a function solely of the scale factor.

To solve the associated equation of motion, the effective mass must be computed explicitly as a function of conformal time: starting from the derivative of the Hubble horizon we find in the slow-roll approximation

$$\frac{d}{d\tau}\frac{1}{aH} = \epsilon_1 - 1 \quad\Rightarrow\quad \frac{a'}{a} = aH \approx -\frac{1+\epsilon_1}{\tau} \quad\Rightarrow\quad \frac{a''}{a} \approx \frac{2+3\epsilon_1}{\tau^2},$$

hence the equation of motion for the above action reads for each mode

$$\sigma''_{(\lambda)} - \boldsymbol{\nabla}^2\sigma_{(\lambda)} - \frac{1}{\tau^2}\left(\nu_T^2 - \frac{1}{4}\right)\sigma_{(\lambda)} = 0, \quad \text{where } \nu_T^2 \overset{\text{def}}{=} \frac{9}{4} + 3\epsilon_1. \tag{4.27}$$

This equation is exactly the Mukhanov-Sasaki equitation (4.21) with a different ν and therefore we won't need any further calculation that hasn't already been done in the previous section. The modes of each polarization are again the Hankel functions with the same normalization we obtained through the Bunch-Davies condition:

$$\tilde{\sigma}_{k(\lambda)} = \sqrt{-\tau}\sqrt{\frac{\pi}{4}}H^{(2)}_{\nu_T}(-k\tau).$$

Also for tensor modes we note that at super Hubble horizon scale these freeze: indeed $\tilde{\sigma}_{k,(\lambda)}$ is a combination of the two solutions τ^{-1} and τ^2. A simple calculation in quasi-De Sitter space gives $a \propto \tau$, which result in two solutions for $\tilde{h}_{k,(\lambda)} \propto a\tilde{\sigma}_{k,(\lambda)}$: a constant one (given by $\tau^{-1}\times\tau$) and a decaying one (given by $\tau^2\times\tau$).

At this point, if we were to quantize the field $\sigma_{(\lambda)}$ we would have obtained the same results of the scalar case for each polarization: a zero expectation value and a variance determined by the power spectrum. Knowing that the physical observable, which moreover does not evolve at superhorizion scales, is $h_{(\lambda)}$ we want to find its power spectrum

$$\begin{aligned}\mathcal{P}_T(k) &\stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \langle 0_{\text{BD}}|\hat{\tilde{h}}_{ij}\hat{\tilde{h}}_{ij}|0_{\text{BD}}\rangle = \frac{16\pi G}{a^2}\sum_{\lambda=+,\times}\langle 0_{\text{BD}}|\hat{\tilde{\sigma}}_{(\lambda)}\hat{\tilde{\sigma}}_{(\lambda)}|0_{\text{BD}}\rangle \\ &= 32\pi G\sum_{\lambda=+,\times}\frac{|\tilde{\sigma}_{k(\lambda)}|^2}{a^2} = 64\pi^2 G\frac{|H^{(2)}_{\nu_T}|^2}{4a^3 H},\end{aligned}$$

where an extra factor $\times 2$ appears since both polarizations contribute equally. Recalling the super Hubble horizon limit of the Hankel function

$$|H^{(2)}_{\nu_T}(-k\tau)|^2 \xrightarrow{k\tau\to 0} \frac{2^{2\nu_T}\Gamma^2(\nu_T)}{\pi^2}(-k\tau)^{-2\nu_T} \xrightarrow{\nu_T\approx 3/2} \frac{2}{\pi}\left(\frac{k}{aH}\right)^{-2\nu_T}, \tag{4.28}$$

we find the power spectrum and the dimensionless power spectrum, respectively:

$$\mathcal{P}_T(k) = \frac{32\pi G}{a^3 H}\left(\frac{k}{aH}\right)^{-2\nu_T}, \qquad \Delta_h(k) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \frac{k^3}{2\pi^2}\mathcal{P}_T(k) = 8\pi G\frac{2H^2}{\pi^2}\left(\frac{k}{aH}\right)^{3-2\nu_T}. \tag{4.29}$$

4.4.3 Phenomenology of the power spectrum

In the previous two sections we obtained the power spectra of primordial scalar and tensor perturbations at the super Hubble horizon scale: in both cases we discovered that the power law is the form of slow-roll inflation power spectra. For each power spectra two quantities are defined: the *amplitude* $\mathcal{A}$ and the *spectral index* or *tilt* n, which are the two quantities that we measure from observations. In general the two power spectra are then expressed as

$$\Delta_{\mathcal{R}}(k) = \mathcal{A}_{\mathcal{R}}\left(\frac{k}{k_0}\right)^{n_s-1} \qquad \text{and} \qquad \Delta_T(k) = \mathcal{A}_h\left(\frac{k}{k_0}\right)^{n_t}, \tag{4.30}$$

where k_0 is called *pivot scale* and defines the scale at which the power spectrum exactly equals to its amplitude. Note that in this way, while the tilt is independent of the pivot scale, the amplitude depends on k_0 since any rescale of this could be reabsorbed in $\mathcal{A}$. From equations (4.24) and (4.29) we recognize at the Hubble horizon scale

$$\mathcal{A}_{\mathcal{R}} = 8\pi G\frac{H^2}{8\pi^2\epsilon_1},\ n_s = 1-2\epsilon_1, \quad \text{and} \quad \mathcal{A}_T = 8\pi G\frac{2H^2}{\pi^2},\ n_t = -2\epsilon_1. \tag{4.31}$$

The above quantities imply that a *consistency* relation should hold between their respective power spectra: indeed, defining the **tensor-to-scalar ratio**

$$r(k) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \frac{\mathcal{P}_T(k)}{\mathcal{P}_{\mathcal{R}}(k)}, \tag{4.32}$$

in the slow-roll approximation of a single field inflation, $r = 16\epsilon_1 = -8n_t$. Deviations from this relation signal that inflation is not driven by a single quantum inflaton field. While the CMB anisotropies allowed to characterize with good precision the power spectrum of primordial scalar perturbations, $\mathcal{A}_{\mathcal{R}} = 2.1\times 10^{-9}$, $n_s = 0.96$ at $k_0 = 0.05\ \text{Mpc}^{-1}$ [8] which shows good agreement with slow-roll inflation, we still haven't measured any signal from the tensor sector. Nowadays, measurements allow us to bound the expected tensor-to-scalar ratio to $r < 0.07$.

Moreover, to account for a broader class of inflationary models, the power spectrum can be phenomenologically generalized introducing a *running spectral index* $n(k)$ and by then Taylor expanding

$$\Delta = \mathcal{A}\left(\frac{k}{k_0}\right)^{n(k_0)-1+\frac{1}{2}\frac{dn}{d\log k}\log\frac{k}{k_0}+\frac{1}{6}\frac{d^2n}{d\log k^2}\log^2\frac{k}{k_0}+\ldots}, \tag{4.33}$$

in this way it can capture deviations from the power law behavior we found.

Chapter 5

GW in the post-inflationary universe

In this section we will explore the evolution of gravitational waves in the post-inlationary universe: understanding this is fundamental to predict how the primordial power spectrum we found can impact present observable and which phenomena can magnify or reduce the resulting signal. To begin with we will describe free propagation of gravitational waves in the different eras of the universe to then introduce interactions that can alter this.

5.1 Free gravitational waves in FRW universe

To study the propagation of gravitational waves in the FRW universe we must start from the Hilbert-Einstain action: at second order with respect to the tensor metric perturbations h_ij it reads

$$\mathcal{S}[h_{ij}] = \frac{1}{64\pi G}\int d^4x a^2\Big[(h'_{ij})^2 - (h_{ij,k})^2\Big].$$

Since the tensor h_{ij} is a transverse traceless symmetric 3-tensor its dynamical degrees of freedom are reduced: to better see this let's move to Fourier space. A transverse symmetric 3-tensor must now satisfy the condition $k^i\tilde{h}_{ij} = k^i\tilde{h}_{ji} = 0$ which, by rotating the axis such that $\mathbf{k} \parallel \hat{\mathbf{z}}$, reads $\tilde{h}_{i1} = \tilde{h}_{1i} = 0$. Further imposing the tracless condition we have $\tilde{h}_{11} = -\tilde{h}_{22}$, since by the transverlaity condition $\tilde{h}_{33} = 0$. Lastly, being a symmetric tensor we have $\tilde{h}_{12} = \tilde{h}_{21}$. This showed that gravitational waves posses only 2 dynamical degrees of freedom, which we call *polarizations*: indeed, defining $\tilde{h}_+ \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \tilde{h}_{12}$ and $\tilde{h}_\times \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \tilde{h}_{11}$

$$\tilde{h}_{ij} = \tilde{h}_+\boldsymbol{\epsilon}^+_{ij} + \tilde{h}_\times\boldsymbol{\epsilon}^\times_{ij} = \begin{pmatrix} \tilde{h}_+ & \tilde{h}_\times & 0 \\ \tilde{h}_\times & -\tilde{h}_+ & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \qquad \text{with } \boldsymbol{\epsilon}^\lambda_{ij}\boldsymbol{\epsilon}^\lambda_{ij} = 1. \tag{5.1}$$

This decomposition allows us to rewrite the action as the sum of the actions of each polarization, which turns out ro be the same:

$$\mathcal{S}[h_{ij}] = \frac{1}{64\pi G}\sum_{\lambda=+,\times}\int d^4x a^2\Big[(h'_{(\lambda)})^2 - (h_{(\lambda),k})^2\Big],$$

Varying this action the equation of motion for both polarizations reads

$$h'' + 2\frac{a'}{a}h' - \boldsymbol{\nabla}^2 h = 0, \tag{5.2}$$

where we suppressed the label λ since the dynamics is identical for both polarizations. To solve the above we shall choose a background on which the gravitational wave propagates: we will consider *radiation dominated* and *matter dominated* backgrounds. In general, the Friedmann equation gives $a(\tau) \propto \tau^{2/(3\omega+1)}$, which results in two different equations of motion: in Fourier space they read

$$\tilde{h}_k'' + 2\frac{\beta}{\tau}\tilde{h}_k' + \boldsymbol{k}^2\tilde{h}_k = 0, \qquad \beta = \begin{cases} 1 \text{ radiation dominated,} \\ 2 \text{ matter dominated.} \end{cases} \tag{5.3}$$

We recognize that the above equation can be turned in the Bessel equation by defining the variable $x \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} k\tau$ and matching $J_\nu = x^\alpha \tilde{h}_k$

$$\begin{aligned} 0 &= \frac{d^2\tilde{h}_k}{dx^2} + 2\frac{\beta}{x}\frac{d\tilde{h}_k}{dx} + \tilde{h}_k = \frac{d^2}{dx^2}J_\nu x^\alpha + 2\frac{\beta}{x}\frac{d}{dx}J_\nu x^\alpha + J_\nu x^\alpha \\ &= x^\alpha\left[\frac{d^2 J_\nu}{dx^2} + \frac{2\alpha}{x}\frac{dJ_\nu}{dx} + \alpha\frac{\alpha-1}{x^2}J_\nu + 2\frac{\beta}{x}\left(\frac{dJ_\nu}{dx} + \frac{\alpha}{x}J_\nu\right) + J_\nu\right] \\ &= x^\alpha\left[\frac{d^2 J_\nu}{dx^2} + 2\frac{\alpha+\beta}{x}\frac{dJ_\nu}{dx} + \left(1 + \alpha\frac{\alpha-1}{x^2} + \frac{2\alpha\beta}{x^2}\right)J_\nu\right] \end{aligned}$$

then by fixing α such that $\alpha + \beta = 1/2$

$$\frac{d^2 J_\nu}{dx^2} + \frac{1}{x}\frac{dJ_\nu}{dx} + \left(1 + \frac{(\beta-\frac{1}{2})^2}{x^2}\right)J_\nu = \frac{d^2 J_\nu}{dx^2} + \frac{1}{x}\frac{dJ_\nu}{dx} + \left(1 - \frac{\nu^2}{x^2}\right)J_\nu = 0.$$

The above shows that the solutions to the gravitational wave equation are the Bessel function, of order $\nu = \beta - \frac{1}{2}$ times $(k\tau)^{-\beta+1/2}$,

$$\tilde{h}_k(\tau) = (k\tau)^{\frac{1}{2}-\beta}\left[C_1(\mathbf{k})J_{\beta-\frac{1}{2}}(k\tau) + C_2(\mathbf{k})Y_{\beta-\frac{1}{2}}(k\tau)\right],$$

where J_ν and Y_ν are the *Bessel functions of the first and second kind*, respectively, and β depends on the background cosmology. Note that the above solution can be expressed in a nicer form by using the *spherical Bessel functions*, which are defined by $j_\ell(x) = \sqrt{\frac{\pi}{2x}}J_{\ell+\frac{1}{2}}$, $y_\ell(x) = \sqrt{\frac{\pi}{2x}}Y_{\ell+\frac{1}{2}}$. Reabsorbing the extra factors and k^β in the two constants C_1 and C_2 and recalling that $a \propto \tau^\beta$ we have

$$\tilde{h}_k(\tau) = C_1(\mathbf{k})\tau\frac{j_{\beta-1}(k\tau)}{a(\tau)} + C_2(\mathbf{k})\tau\frac{y_{\beta-1}(k\tau)}{a(\tau)}. \tag{5.4}$$

Note that the above solution holds also during slow-roll inflation, when a simple calculation gives $\beta \approx -1$. Lastly, let us appreciate that super Hubble horizon and sub Hubble horizon regimes we recover the behaviors which we already discovered studying inflation: from equation (5.2), in the limit $k^2 \gg a'/a = aH$ oscillating modes are displayed at sub Hubble horizon scales while for $k^2 \ll a'/a = aH$ the solution reads:

$$\tilde{h}_k(\tau) = C_1(\mathbf{k}) + C_2(\mathbf{k})\int\frac{d\tau}{a^2},$$

which is a combination of a constant mode and a mode that decays as the universe expands.

5.2 Interacting GW

The previous section was devoted to study the evolution of tensor perturbations, namely primordial gravitational waves, in the free case, when no matter perturbation is coupled to these modes. In general, perturbing the Einstein field equations with tensor perturbations, results in the following

$$\delta G_{\mu\nu} = 8\pi G \delta T_{\mu\nu} \quad \Rightarrow \quad h''_{ij} + 2\frac{a'}{a}h'_{ij} - \boldsymbol{\nabla}^2 h_{ij} = 16\pi G a^2 \delta T_{ij},$$

where δT_{ij} is the perturbation of the spatial part of the energy-momentum tensor of the cosmic fluid. When we studied matter perturbations (section 4.1) we allowed this tensor to contain a spatial transverse traceless contribution called *anisotropic stress*. From the above equation it is clear that, accordingly to the symmetries of h_{ij}, the only term that can appears at the right-hand side, from the energy-momentum tensor, is the anisotropic stress:

$$h''_{ij} + 2\frac{a'}{a}h'_{ij} - \boldsymbol{\nabla}^2 h_{ij} = 16\pi G a^2 \pi_{ij}. \tag{5.5}$$

In the next section we will study three different sources of anisotropic stress that can influence the evolution of primordial gravitational waves.

5.2.1 Neutrino damping

Weinberg [17] showed that free streaming neutrinos, neutrinos that decoupled from the plasma and can move freely without being scattered (Section 2.2.1) can source anisotropic stress that then couples with the gravitational waves reducing their amplitudes after having crossed back the Hubble horizon. In this section we will illustrate this behavior.

To obtain the anisotropic stress related to neutrinos we shall understand their behavior in the early universe: as we know from Section 2.1, this is described by the *Boltzmann equation*. Describing decoupled neutrinos the collision term must be set to zero, hence the Boltzmann equation will be just a conservation equation. Following the calulations carried out by Weinberg, we will not use the local momentum $\mathbf{p}$ to write the Boltzmann equation. Instead, the comoving momentum $\mathbf{P}$ allows us to make more explicit which term can depend on the metric and source anisotropic stresses. By the chain rule, the Liouville operator can be expressed as

$$\hat{L}[f] = \frac{df}{dt} = \frac{\partial f}{\partial t} + \frac{\partial f}{\partial x^i}\frac{dx^i}{dt} + \frac{\partial f}{\partial P_i}\frac{dP_i}{dt},$$

where we can evaluate all the remaining total derivatives with respect to time from the relativistic equations of motion:

$$\frac{dx^i}{dt} = \frac{dx^i/d\lambda}{dx^0/d\lambda} = \frac{P^i}{P^0}, \qquad \frac{dP^i}{d\lambda} = \frac{dP^i}{dt}P^0 = -\Gamma^i_{\mu\nu}P^\mu P^\nu.$$

A simple calculation yields

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{dP_i}{dt} =& \frac{d}{dt} g_{ij} P^j = g_{ij,0} P^j + h_{ij,k} P^i P^k + g_{ij} \frac{dP^j}{dt} \\
&= g_{ij,0} P^j + g_{ij,k} P^j P^k - \Gamma^i_{\mu\nu} \frac{P^\mu P^\nu}{P^0} \\
&= g_{ij,0} P^j + g_{ij,k} P^j P^k - 2\frac{1}{2} g^{ik} g_{jk,0} P^j - \frac{1}{2} g^{ih} (g_{hk,j} + g_{hj,k} - g_{jk,h}) \frac{P^k P^j}{P^0} \\
&= \frac{1}{2} g_{jk,i} \frac{P^k P^j}{P^0}
\end{aligned}
$$

In this way the Boltzmann equation reads

$$
\frac{\partial f}{\partial t} + \frac{\partial f}{\partial x^i} \frac{P^i}{P^0} + \frac{\partial f}{\partial P_i} \frac{P^j P^k}{2P^0} g_{jk,i} = 0. \tag{5.6}
$$

We will now assume that initially at some time t_1, just after decoupling from the plasma, neutrinos, that were previously in equilibrium with the plasma, are described by a *Fermi-Dirac* distribution with negligible chemical potential:

$$
f(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{P}, t_1) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \bar{f}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{P}) = \left[\exp\left(\sqrt{g^{ij}(\mathbf{x}, t_1) P_i P_j} / k_B T_1 \right) + 1 \right]^{-1},
$$

where T_1 is the temperature of the plasma at t_1 and k_B is the Boltzmann constant. In the absence of perturbations the Boltzmann equation would maintain the above solution as time evolves. However, introducing metric perturbations we now have to allow for perturbations δf of the phase space distribution to arise with the condition $\delta f(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{p}, t_1) = 0$, so that overall we find

$$
f(x, \mathbf{P}) = \left[\exp\left(\sqrt{g^{ij}(\mathbf{x}, t_1) P_i P_j} / k_B T_1 \right) + 1 \right]^{-1} + \delta f(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{P}, t).
$$

By plugging the above in the Boltzmann equation (5.6) and keeping only up to first order terms, the equation of motion for the perturbations δf is obtained:

$$
\begin{aligned}
0 &= \frac{\partial \delta f}{\partial t} + \frac{\partial \delta f}{\partial x^i} \frac{P^i}{P^0} + \frac{P^i}{P^0} \frac{\partial}{\partial x^i} \frac{1}{e^{\sqrt{P_i P^j}/k_B T_1} + 1} + \frac{P^j P^k}{2P^0} g_{jk,i} \frac{\partial}{\partial P_i} \frac{1}{e^{\sqrt{P_i P^j}/k_B T_1} + 1} \\
&= \frac{\partial \delta f}{\partial t} + \frac{\partial \delta f}{\partial x^i} \frac{\hat{P}^i}{a} + \frac{\hat{P}^k}{a} \bar{f}'(P) \frac{P_i P_j}{2P^0} {g^{ij}}_{,k}(\mathbf{x}, t_1) + \bar{f}'(P) P^i \frac{P^j P^k}{2P^0} g_{jk,i}(\mathbf{x}, t) \\
&= \frac{\partial \delta f}{\partial t} + \frac{\partial \delta f}{\partial x^i} \frac{\hat{P}^i}{a} - \frac{P}{2a} \bar{f}'(P) \hat{P}_k \hat{P}_i \hat{P}_j h_{ij,k}(\mathbf{x}, t_1) + \frac{P}{2a} \bar{f}'(P) P_k \hat{P}_j \hat{P}_i h_{ji,k}(\mathbf{x}, t) \\
&\Longrightarrow \qquad \boxed{\frac{\partial \delta f}{\partial t} + \frac{\partial \delta f}{\partial x^i} \frac{\hat{P}^i}{a} = \frac{P}{2a} \bar{f}'(P) \hat{P}_k \hat{P}_i \hat{P}_j \left[h_{ij}(\mathbf{x}, t_1) - h_{ij}(\mathbf{x}, t) \right]_{,k}},
\end{aligned}
$$

where the prime indicates derivatives with respect to the argument of the function and $\hat{P}^i \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} P^i/P$ with $P \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \sqrt{P_i P_j \delta^{ij}} = aP^0$. This differential equation can be integrated quite easily if we assume that the $\mathbf{x}$ dependence of h_{ij} and δf is solely due to a factor $e^{i\mathbf{k}\cdot\mathbf{x}}$ and by defining a new variable $u = k \int_{t_1}^t dt'/a(t')$: in this way we have

$$
\frac{a}{k} \frac{\partial \delta f}{\partial t} + i \delta f \hat{\mathbf{P}} \cdot \hat{\mathbf{k}} = \frac{\partial}{\partial u} \left(\delta f e^{i \hat{\mathbf{P}} \cdot \hat{\mathbf{k}} u} \right) = i \frac{P}{2} \bar{f}'(P) \hat{\mathbf{P}} \cdot \hat{\mathbf{k}} \ \hat{P}_i \hat{P}_j \left[h_{ij}(t_1) - h_{ij}(t) \right]
$$

which upon integration, with the initial condition $\delta f(t = t_1) = 0$, gives

$$\delta f(u, \mathbf{P}) = \frac{i}{2}\bar{f}'(P)\hat{\mathbf{P}} \cdot \hat{\mathbf{k}}\hat{P}_i\hat{P}_j \int_0^u du' e^{i\hat{\mathbf{P}}\cdot\hat{\mathbf{k}}(u'-u)}\big(h_{ij}(0) - h_{ij}(u')\big). \tag{5.7}$$

We now proceed to compute the anisotropic stress tensor π_{ij}, which accordingly to our definition in Section 2.1 corresponds to the transverse traceless spatial part of the energy-momentum tensor, that for a given phase space distribution reads

$$T^i_{\ j} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{-g}} \int dP_1 dP_2 dP_3\ f(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{p}, t)\frac{P^i P_j}{P^0}.$$

In the above equation three first order terms are produced: by the perturbation δf and by the momenta P^i and P^0 through the metric ($P^i = g^{ij}P_j$ and $P^0 = \sqrt{g^i j P_i P_j}$). Combining these contributions together Weinberg [17] shows that the anisotropic stress reads

$$\pi_{ij} = -4\bar{\rho}_\nu(u) \int_0^u dU\ K(u - U)h'_{ij}(U), \quad \text{where} \quad K(s) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \frac{1}{16}\int_{-1}^{+1} dx(1 - x^2)^2 e^{ixs}, \tag{5.8}$$

and again the prime indicates derivatives with respect to the argument of the function while $\bar{\rho}_\nu$ is the background energy density of neutrinos. Lastly, solving the above kernel integral yields

$$K(s) = -\frac{\sin s}{s^3} - 3\frac{\cos s}{s^4} + 3\frac{\sin s}{s^5}.$$

The result (5.8) can be plugged back in the equation of motion of gravitational waves (5.5) to obtain an integro-differential equation for h_{ij}:

$$\begin{aligned} h''_{ij}(u) + 2\frac{a'}{a}h'_{ij}(u) + h_{ij}(u) &= -\frac{64\pi G}{k^2}a^2\bar{\rho}_\nu(u)\int_0^u dU\ K(u - U)h'_{ij}(U) \\ &= -24 f_\nu(u)\left(\frac{a'}{a}\right)^2 \int_0^u dU\ K(u - U)h'_{ij}(U), \end{aligned} \tag{5.9}$$

where we assumed again $h_{ij} \propto e^{i\mathbf{k}\cdot\mathbf{x}}$, then we changed the variable in equation (5.5) to u and in the second line we used the Friedmann equation to refactor the energy density of neutrinos into $f_\nu = \bar{\rho}_\nu/\bar{\rho}$. Lastly, as we have done in the previous sections we can decompose the tensor modes in their two polarizations, which both satisfy the above.

Solutions for the equation we found can be approximated in the sub Hubble horizon limit during radiation domination ($a \propto \tau \propto u$), long after the decoupling of neutrinos so that $t_1 \approx 0$. Considering three neutrino flavors, then f_ν takes the constant value of 0.40523 and overall we get for each polarization

$$h''(u) + \frac{2}{u}h'(u) + h(u) = -\frac{24 f_\nu}{u^2}\int_0^u dU\ K(u - U)h'(U).$$

The factor u^{-2}, in the right-hand side, suppresses the effects of the anisotropic stress inside the Hubble horizon ($u = k\tau$) were the free solution (5.2) is recovered

$$h(u) \xrightarrow{u\to 0} \frac{A\sin(u + \delta)}{u},$$

with A and δ are constants that must be computed numerically. Dicus and Repko [9] integrated equation (5.9) numerically expanding the solutions on the spherical Bessel functions $j_n(u)$,

$$h(u) = \sum_{n \text{ even}}^{\infty} a_n j_n(u). \tag{5.10}$$

In their work they have computed the numerical coefficients $a_0 = 1$, $a_2 = 0.0243807$, $a_4 = 5.28424 \times 10^{-2}$, $a_6 = 6.13545 \times 10^{-3}$. $a_8 = 2.07534 \times 10^{-4}$, $a_{10} = 6.16273 \times 10^{-5}$, $a_{12} = -4.78885 \times 10^{-6}$ and with smaller and smaller higher coefficients. Moreover, considering that for $u \to 0$ all the even order Bessel functions behave as $(-1)^{n/2} \sin(u)/u$, the factor A can be approximated to be

$$A \approx \sum_{n=0}^{5} (-1)^n a_{2n} \approx 0.80313,$$

which shows that the effect of the anisotropic stress is to reduce the amplitude of horizon crossing tensor perturbations.

5.2.2 Photon damping

A further interaction that can damp the amplitude of primordial gravitational waves is the interaction with photons. Without going in the details of the calculations that can be found in Section 6.3.1, due to their symmetries primordial gravitational waves are directly coupled to the quadrupole momentum of the photon anisotropies. This happens precisely because projecting the polarizations $\mathbf{e}_{ij}^{\lambda}$ onto the local 3-momentum yields

$$\mathbf{e}_{ij}^{(\pm)} \hat{p}^i \hat{p}^j = \sin^2\theta[\cos^2\phi - \sin^2\phi \pm 2i \sin\phi\cos\phi] = \sin^2\theta e^{\pm i2\phi} \propto Y_{2,\pm 2}(\theta, \phi),$$

where $Y_{2,\pm 2}(\theta, \phi)$ are the spherical harmonics of order 2 and $m = \pm 2$ and $\mathbf{e}_{ij}^{(\pm)}$ is the polarization basis introduced by Hu and White [12] of equation (6.30). Indeed, if we expand the phase space distribution, over an initial Planckian distribution, for small fluctuations in the temperature $\Theta(t, \mathbf{x}, \mathbf{p})$ we obtain a perturbation proportional to Θ itself (the complete calculation can be found in Section 6.1.2):

$$f(t, \mathbf{x}, \mathbf{p}) = \left[\exp\left\{\frac{p}{k_B \bar{T}(1+\Theta)}\right\} - 1\right]^{-1} \approx \frac{1}{e^{\frac{p}{k_b \bar{T}}} - 1} - \Theta p \frac{\partial \bar{f}}{\partial p},$$

where $\bar{T}$ is the average temperature and $\bar{f}$ is the Planckian distribution. In Section 4.1 we introduced the anisotropic stress as the transverse traceless part of the energy-momentum tensor, this means that in Fourier space the same decomposition of the polarizations of greavitational waves (5.1) holds:

$$\tilde{\pi}_{ij} = \tilde{\pi}^{(+)} \boldsymbol{e}_{ij}^{+} + \tilde{\pi}^{(\times)} \boldsymbol{e}_{ij}^{\times} = \sqrt{\frac{3}{2}} \left(\tilde{\pi}^{(+)} \mathbf{e}_{ij}^{(+)} + \tilde{\pi}^{(-)} \mathbf{e}_{ij}^{(-)}\right).$$

We can obtain the anisotropic stress by projecting the energy-momentum tensor onto the polarization basis

$$\begin{aligned}
\sqrt{\frac{3}{2}}\tilde{T}^{ij}\boldsymbol{e}^{(\pm)}_{ij} &= \sqrt{\frac{3}{2}}\tilde{\pi}^{ij}\boldsymbol{e}^{(\pm)}_{ij} = \frac{3}{2}4\tilde{\pi}^{(\mp)} \\
&= \frac{g_{\rm dof}}{(2\pi)^3}\sqrt{\frac{3}{2}}\int d^3p\frac{p^ip^j}{p^0}\boldsymbol{e}^{(\pm)}_{ij}f(t,\mathbf{k},\mathbf{p}) \\
&= \frac{g_{\rm dof}}{(2\pi)^3}\sqrt{\frac{3}{2}}\int d^3p\ p\ \sin^2(\theta)e^{\pm i2\phi}\left(\bar{f}(t,p)-\tilde{\Theta}p\frac{\partial\bar{f}}{\partial p}\right),
\end{aligned}$$

where in the first line we used that $\boldsymbol{e}^{(\pm)}_{ij}\boldsymbol{e}^{(\pm)}_{ij}=0$ and $\boldsymbol{e}^{(\pm)}_{ij}\boldsymbol{e}^{(\mp)}_{ij}=4$. At ths stage we can recognise the spherical harmonics $Y_{2,\pm2}(\theta,\phi)=\sqrt{\frac{15}{2\pi}}\ \sin^2\theta e^{\pm i2\phi}$ and that by othronormality the integral over the solid angle of $\hat{\mathbf{p}}$ vanished when intrgating $\bar{f}(t,p)$, while the remaining term gives the quadrupole momentum of the anisotropies. Indeed, expanding $\tilde{\Theta}$ and using again orthogonality we find

$$\begin{aligned}
\tilde{\Theta}(\mathbf{k},\hat{\mathbf{p}}) &= \sum_{\ell,m}(-i)^\ell\sqrt{\frac{4\pi}{2\ell+1}}Y_{\ell,m}(\hat{\mathbf{p}})\tilde{\Theta}^{(m)}_\ell(\mathbf{k}), \\
\tilde{\pi}^{(\mp)} &= -\frac{g_{\rm dof}}{6(2\pi)^3}\sqrt{\frac{3}{2}}\int d^3p\ p^2\frac{\partial\bar{f}}{\partial p}\sum_{\ell,m}(-i)^\ell\sqrt{\frac{2\pi}{15}}\sqrt{\frac{4\pi}{2\ell+1}}Y^*_{2,\mp2}Y_{\ell m}\tilde{\Theta}^{(m)}_\ell \\
&= -\frac{g_{\rm dof}}{6(2\pi)^3}\int_0^\infty dp\ p^4\frac{\partial\bar{f}}{\partial p}(-i)^2\frac{2\pi}{5}\tilde{\Theta}^{(\mp2)}_2 \\
&= \tilde{\Theta}^{(\mp2)}_2\frac{2}{15}\frac{g_{\rm dof}}{(2\pi)^3}\int_0^\infty dp\ 4\pi p^3\bar{f} = \frac{2}{15}\tilde{\Theta}^{(\mp2)}_2\bar{\rho}_\gamma,
\end{aligned}$$

where in the last line we integrated by parts and then we recognised the integral which yields the energy density.

One can show that this quadrupole momenta is generated directly by primordial gravitational waves (see Section 6.3), hence creating a back reaction effect. Using the Friedmann equation in conformal time, $\mathcal{H}^2=\frac{8\pi G}{3}\bar{\rho}a^2$, and assuming radiation domination, $a\propto\tau$ and $\bar{\rho}=\bar{\rho}_\gamma+\bar{\rho}_\nu$, equation (5.5). After having decomposed it in the two polarizations, with our previous result we have:

$$\tilde{h}''_k+\frac{2}{\tau}\tilde{h}'_k+\boldsymbol{k}^2\tilde{h}_k=\frac{8}{5}\mathcal{H}^2\frac{\bar{\rho}_\gamma}{\bar{\rho}}\tilde{\Theta}^{(2)}_2,$$

Lastly, since relevant modes renter the Hubble at high redshift, we assume the tight coupling limit, the limit in which photons scatterings are very frequent in the plasma and higher multipoles become negligible. In Section 6.4.1 we will show that in this approximation holds $\tilde{\Theta}^{(2)}_2\approx-\frac{4}{3}\frac{\tilde{h}'}{n_e\sigma_Ta}$, where n_e is the electron number density and σ_T is the Thomson cross-section. In this way we finally obtain

$$\tilde{h}''_k+\frac{2}{\tau}\tilde{h}'_k+\boldsymbol{k}^2\tilde{h}_k=-\mathcal{H}^2\frac{32(1-R_\nu)}{15n_e\sigma_Ta}\tilde{h}'_k\overset{\rm def}{=}-\Gamma_\gamma\tilde{h}'_k,$$

where we defined $R_\nu\overset{\rm def}{=}\bar{\rho}_\nu/(\bar{\rho}_\gamma+\bar{\rho}_\nu)$. Note that since $a\times n_e\propto a^{-2}$, as well as $\mathcal{H}$ during radiation domination, overall Γ_γ is constant. In the sub Hubble horizon limit we can neglect the term $\frac{2}{\tau}\tilde{h}'_k$ and the equation of motions turns into a damped harmonic oscillator. This means that in this regime the solution reads

$$\tilde{h}_k(\tau) \approx \tilde{h}_k^{\text{free}}(\tau) e^{-\frac{\Gamma_\gamma}{2}\tau}, \tag{5.11}$$

which is the free solution damped of an exponential factor. On supehorizon scales the tensor modes are frozen and the damping can be neglected.

5.2.3 Primordial magnetic fields

In this section we will analyze a different interaction that can take place in the early universe and that, instead of damping primodial gravitational waves, can source them. Before the decoupling epoch the electric conductivity of the plasma was very high resulting in the total dissipation of any electric field present in the universe. Hence, in these extreme conditions, only stationary magnetic fields could survive and interact with the content of the universe.

Consider the electromagnetic tensor

$$F_{\mu\nu} = \nabla_\mu A_\nu - \nabla_\nu A_\mu = \partial_\mu A_\nu - \partial_\nu A_\mu = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & -E_x & -E_y & -E_z \\ E_x & 0 & B_z & -B_y \\ E_y & -B_z & 0 & B_x \\ E_z & B_y & -B_x & 0 \end{pmatrix},$$

where A_μ is the 4-potential while E_i and B_i are the electric and magnetic fields. The energy-momentum tensor of the electromagnetic field is given by

$$T^\mu{}_\nu = \frac{1}{4\pi}\left(F^{\mu\alpha}F_{\nu\alpha} - \frac{1}{4}g^\mu{}_\nu F^{\alpha\beta}F_{\alpha\beta}\right).$$

For these a straight forward computation shows that, in the absence of electric fields, the energy-momentum tensor reads

$$T^0{}_0 = \frac{1}{8\pi a^4}\left(B^2 - \frac{1}{2}B^2\right) = \frac{1}{16\pi a^4}B^2, \tag{5.12a}$$

$$T^0{}_i = 0, \tag{5.12b}$$

$$T^i{}_j = \frac{1}{8\pi a^4}\left(B^iB_j - \frac{1}{2}\delta^i{}_j B^2\right) = \frac{1}{8\pi a^4}\left(B^iB_j - \frac{1}{4}\delta^i{}_j B^2\right). \tag{5.12c}$$

We immediately recognize in the components (5.12c) a pressure term plus a contribution that can result in an anisotropic stress: this shows that in the presence of primordial magnetic fields, tensor perturbations will be coupled to these. To explicitly obtain the anisotropic stress we can Fourier transform the magnetic field, then projecting $\tilde{T}^i_j$ with $P_{ij} = \delta_{ij} - \hat{k}_i\hat{k}_j$, to obtain just the transverse part, and lastly we remove its trace:

$$\tilde{\pi}^{(B)}_{ij} \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \tilde{T}_{hk}\,(P^h{}_i\,P^k{}_j - \frac{1}{2}P_{ij}\,P^{kh}),$$

where the factor $\frac{1}{2}$ corresponds to 2-dimensional space on which we project and $\hat{k}$ is the versor of the wave vector $\mathbf{k}$.

Since we know that Einstein filed equations couple gravitational waves to anisotropic stress, in Fourier space their equation of motion reads

$$\tilde{h}''_{ij} + 2\frac{a'}{a}\tilde{h}'_{ij} + \boldsymbol{k}^2\tilde{h}_{ij} = 16\pi G a^2 \tilde{\pi}^{(B)}_{ij}. \tag{5.13}$$

The peculiarity of this kind of source term is that, not being determined by the system of equations that describes all the cosmological perturbations, it is a generic forcing term that can magnify the amplitude of gravitational waves.

In general, we model primordial magnetic fields as a stochastic background described by a 2- point function, in momentum space,

$$\langle B_i(\mathbf{k})B^*_j(\mathbf{k}')\rangle = (2\pi)^3\delta^3(\mathbf{k}-\mathbf{k}')P_{ij}(\mathbf{k})\frac{\mathcal{P}_B(k)}{2},, \tag{5.14}$$

were $\mathcal{P}_B$ is the power spectrum of such background. Phenomenologically these power spectra can be characterized by a power law

$$\mathcal{P}_B(k) = \mathcal{A}_B\left(\frac{k}{k_0}\right)^{n_B},$$

which then allows for the source term to be computed. However, we will not go into the details of these calculations, and we will limit ourselves to quote [16] the result in the case $n_B = 2$ (fig. ??):

$$|\tilde{\pi}^{(B)}(k)|^2\Big|_{n_B=2} = \frac{\mathcal{A_B}^2 k_D^7}{256\pi^4 k_\star^4}\left[\frac{8}{15} - \frac{7}{6}k + \frac{16}{15}k^2 - \frac{7}{24}k^3 - \frac{13}{480}k^5 + \frac{11}{1920}k^7\right],$$

which has been computed through the two point correlation function

$$\langle\tilde{\pi}^{*(B)}_{ij}(k)\tilde{\pi}^{(B)}_{hk}\rangle = \frac{1}{4}|\tilde{\pi}^{(B)}(k)|^2\mathcal{M}_{ijkh}(k)\delta(k-k'),\ \text{and}\ \mathcal{M}_{ijkh}(k) \overset{\text{def}}{=} P_{ik}P_{jh} + P_{ih}P_{jk} - P_{ij}P_{hk}.$$

In the above result, the *damping scale* k_D appears: this represents the scale at which magnetic fields are damped by other interactions with the plasma and mathematically corresponds to an upper cut-off to every integral of the power spectrum.

Decomposing the gravitational wave in its two polarization and considering radiation domination $a \propto \tau$, we obtain the following differential equation for each polarization

$$\tilde{h}''_k + \frac{2}{\tau}\tilde{h}'_k + \mathbf{k}^2\tilde{h}_k = \frac{6}{\tau^2}\frac{\tilde{\pi}^{(B)}}{\bar{\rho}_\gamma},$$

where we used the Friedmann equation to obtain the time independent ratio $\tilde{\pi}^{(B)}/\bar{\rho}_\gamma$ (since numerator and denominator scale with the same power of $a(\tau)$). It is easy to check that the above equation, in the super Hubble horizon limit, has a logarithmically growing solution $h_k \propto \log(k\tau)$. This, at least in theory, would allow for an unbounded growth of the tensor modes.

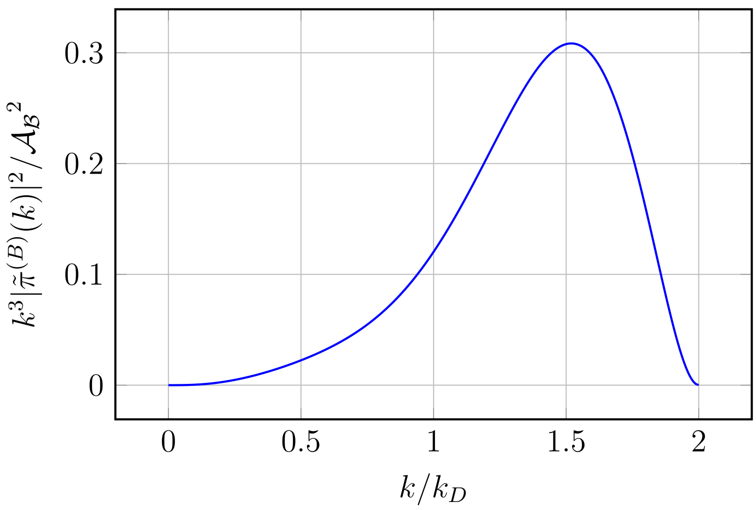


Figure 5.1: Plot of $k^3|\tilde{\pi}^{(B)}(k)|^2$ for $n_B = 2$ as a function of k/k_D. We can appreciate that the anisotropic stress has a peak right after k_D, to then vanish for $2k_D$.

III

CMB physic

Chapter 6

Anisotropies of the CMB

The *cosmic microwave background radiation*, as we explained in section 1.2.3, is one of the most valuable source of information that we got from the early universe. Its usefulness is encoded in its **anisotropies**: the small variations, in its temperature for example, from the perfectly homogeneous radiation that we would have in absence of perturbations. Anisotropies thus are a direct link to the perturbations that were generated in the early universe and allow us to obtain data from the earliest stages of the universe, such as inflation. To begin we will consider scalar perturbations, then we will also develop the same machinery for the tenosr one.

6.1 Angular power spectrum

When we observe the *CMB* in the sky, we measure the temperature of photons coming from a specific direction $\hat{\mathbf{n}}$ to us. As we know, this temperature is not perfectly the same from all directions, we call these tiny differences *anisotropies*:

$$T(\hat{\mathbf{n}}) = \bar{T}\left[1 + \Theta(\hat{\mathbf{n}})\right] \qquad \text{with } \Theta(\hat{\mathbf{n}}) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \frac{\Delta T(\hat{\mathbf{n}})}{\bar{T}}$$

and where $\bar{T}$ is the average temperature in the sky and $\Delta T(\hat{\mathbf{n}})$ is the temperature fluctuation in the direction $\hat{\mathbf{n}}$. To compare the temperature at two district points in the sky we define the *two point correlation function*:

$$C(\hat{\mathbf{n}}, \hat{\mathbf{n}}') \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \langle \Theta(\hat{\mathbf{n}})\Theta(\hat{\mathbf{n}}') \rangle, \tag{6.1}$$

here the angle brackets denote an average over an ensemble of universes (It will be discussed later in this section how we can approximate this averaging process).

The most appropriate way to describe the temperature fluctuations, given that these are observed from the sky, is to expand Θ in spherical harmonics

$$\Theta(\hat{\mathbf{n}}) = \sum_{\ell=0}^{\infty} \sum_{m=-\ell}^{\ell} a_{\ell m} Y_{\ell m}(\hat{\mathbf{n}}), \tag{6.2}$$

where the coefficients $a_{\ell m}$, also called **multipole moments**, are given by

$$a_{\ell m} = \int d\Omega \; \Theta(\hat{\mathbf{n}}) Y^*_{\ell m}(\hat{\mathbf{n}}).$$

Also, for the multipole moments we can define a two point correlation function

$$\langle a_{\ell m} a^*_{\ell' m'} \rangle = \delta_{\ell\ell'} \delta_{mm'} \, C_\ell, \tag{6.3}$$

where C_ℓ is the **angular power spectrum** and again the angle brackets represent an ensemble average. Sometimes it is also used $\mathcal{D}_\ell \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \frac{\ell(\ell+1)}{2\pi} \bar{T}^2 C_\ell$.

Note that combining (6.2) and (6.1) we obtain

$$\begin{aligned}
C(\hat{\mathbf{n}}, \hat{\mathbf{n}}') &= \langle \Theta(\hat{\mathbf{n}}) \Theta(\hat{\mathbf{n}}') \rangle \\
&= \sum_{\ell=0}^{\infty} \sum_{m=-\ell}^{\ell} \sum_{\ell'=0}^{\infty} \sum_{m'=-\ell'}^{\ell'} \langle a_{\ell m} a_{\ell' m'} \rangle Y_{\ell m}(\hat{\mathbf{n}}) Y_{\ell' m'}(\hat{\mathbf{n}}') \\
&= \sum_{\ell=0}^{\infty} C_\ell \sum_{m=-\ell}^{\ell} Y_{\ell m}(\hat{\mathbf{n}}) Y^*_{\ell m}(\hat{\mathbf{n}}') \\
&\Big\downarrow \quad \text{using} \sum_{m=-\ell}^{\ell} Y_{\ell m}(\hat{\mathbf{n}}) Y^*_{\ell m}(\hat{\mathbf{n}}') = \frac{2\ell+1}{4\pi} P_\ell(\cos\theta) \\
&= \sum_{\ell=0}^{\infty} C_\ell \frac{2\ell+1}{4\pi} P_\ell(\cos\theta),
\end{aligned}$$

where P_ℓ are the Legendre polynomials and θ is the angle between $\hat{\mathbf{n}}$ and $\hat{\mathbf{n}}'$. Invoking the orthogonality of the Legendre polynomials we can write

$$C_\ell = 2\pi \int_{-1}^{1} d(\cos\theta) \; P_\ell(\cos\theta) C(\hat{\mathbf{n}}, \hat{\mathbf{n}}'), \tag{6.4}$$

this shows that the angular power spectrum encodes the same information as the two point correlation function (6.1), hence it measures the correlation between the temperature fluctuations at two points in the sky separated by an angle θ.

We now want to understand how can we estimate the average over the ensemble of universes in the previous definitions. Note that, fixed ℓ, we still get $2\ell+1$ different values of $a_{\ell m}$, this allows us to estimate the angular power spectrum as

$$\hat{C}_\ell = \frac{1}{2\ell+1} \sum_{m=-\ell}^{\ell} |a_{\ell m}|^2. \tag{6.5}$$

One can show that this estimator is unbiased[1], however its variance is non-zero:

$$\Delta \hat{C}_\ell \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \sqrt{\langle (C_\ell - \hat{C}_\ell)^2 \rangle} = \sqrt{\frac{2}{2\ell+1}} C_\ell, \tag{6.6}$$

this error that systematically appears in this estimate is usually called **cosmic variance**. Cosmic variance will result in a larger error for smaller values of ℓ, which corresponds to larger angular scales. This can be understood as a consequence of the fewer number of modes $a_{\ell m}$ available at lower ℓ.

[1] An estimator is said to be unbiased if its expected value is equal to the true value of the parameter being estimated.

6.1.1 Multipole expansion

In the previous section we considered the temperature fluctuations observed by us in the sky, therefore it was natural to assume that these were functions of the direction of observation $\hat{\mathbf{n}}$. In general however, we should consider that these anisotropies varies also with the position of the observer in spacetime. This broader view is needed since to predict the observations we will need to describe the evolution of the anisotropies throughout the whole universe. Therefore, we will now consider

$$\Theta(t, \mathbf{x}, \hat{\mathbf{p}}) \quad \text{with} \begin{cases} t & \text{cosmic time,} \\ \mathbf{x} & \text{position of the anisotropy in space,} \\ \hat{\mathbf{p}} & \text{direction of motion of the photons.} \end{cases} \tag{6.7}$$

To come back to the observed anisotropies we just fix t at the present day, $\mathbf{x}$ on the earth and we consider the direction of motion of the photons as the direction of observation (since it is the direction from which they come from).

In section 6.2 we will see that the evolution of the anisotropies is described by a linear differential equation (since we are working with first order perturbations). It is therefore useful to introduce here some expansions that will simplify these equations.
First of all, we can simplify the spacial dependence moving to Fourier space

$$\Theta(t, \mathbf{x}, \hat{\mathbf{p}}) = \int \frac{d^3k}{(2\pi)^3} e^{i\mathbf{k}\cdot\mathbf{x}} \tilde{\Theta}(\mathbf{k}, t, \hat{\mathbf{p}}), \tag{6.8}$$

where $\tilde{\Theta}$ is the Fourier transform of Θ. In this way, we obtained a decomposition on plane waves that leaves $\tilde{\Theta}$ depending on two vectors, $\mathbf{k}$ and $\hat{\mathbf{p}}$. However, when dealing with the anisotropies generated only by *scalar perturbations*[2], as we will see in section 6.2 the quantities that really matter are encoded in one of these two vectors and in the angle between them. This allows us to define

$$\mu = \frac{\mathbf{k}\cdot\hat{\mathbf{p}}}{k} \qquad \Rightarrow \qquad \tilde{\Theta}(t, \mathbf{k}, \mu) \quad \text{with } \mu \in [-1, 1].$$

This suggests us to that another useful expansion is the **Legendre polynomial expansion**:

$$\tilde{\Theta}(t, \mathbf{k}, \mu) = \sum_{\ell=0}^{\infty} \frac{2\ell+1}{i^\ell} \tilde{\Theta}_\ell(t, \mathbf{k}) P_\ell(\mu), \tag{6.9}$$
$$\tilde{\Theta}_\ell(t, \mathbf{k}) = \frac{i^\ell}{2} \int_{-1}^{1} d\mu \; P_\ell(\mu) \tilde{\Theta}(t, \mathbf{k}, \mu),$$

where P_ℓ are the Legendre polynomials and $\tilde{\Theta}_\ell$ are the **multipoles**.
The Legendre polynomials can be computed recursively using the Bonnet's formula

$$(\ell+1)P_{\ell+1}(\mu) = (2\ell+1)\mu P_\ell(\mu) - \ell P_{\ell-1}(\mu), \tag{6.10}$$

and knowing that $P_0 = 1$, $P_1 = \mu$ and $P_2 = \frac{3\mu^2-1}{2}$.

[2]For tensor perturbations this expansion is not appropriate anymore, this is discussed in section 6.3

6.1.2 From perturbations to anisotropies

It is now time to discuss how in general we connect the perturbations of the FRW universe to the angular power spectrum of the anisotropies that we observe in the *CMB*. Even though we will not study, in this work, the anisotropies themselves, this connection will be used, in a similar manner, when dealing with spectral distortions in the next chapter.

We are interested in evaluating $\langle\tilde{\Theta}(\mathbf{k},\hat{\mathbf{n}})\tilde{\Theta}(\mathbf{k}',\hat{\mathbf{n}}')\rangle$. This quantity is determined by two phenomena:

1. the initial amplitude of the perturbations generated during inflation, which from our point of view are random variables generated by vacuum fluctuations;
2. the evolution the anisotropies that we observe today and how they are sourced by the primordial perturbations: this process is clearly deterministic.

This consideration allows us to proceed in the following way: considering a generic primordial perturbation $\delta(\mathbf{k})$, we can decompose $\tilde{\Theta}(\mathbf{k},\hat{\mathbf{n}}) = \delta(\tilde{\Theta}/\delta)$, now the ratio $\tilde{\Theta}/\delta$ is completely independent of the initial amplitude of the perturbation (by initial conditions also Θ is proportional to this amplitude) and won't contribute to the ensemble average. In this way we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
\langle\tilde{\Theta}(\mathbf{k},\hat{\mathbf{n}})\tilde{\Theta}^*(\mathbf{k}',\hat{\mathbf{n}}')\rangle &= \langle\delta(\mathbf{k})\delta(\mathbf{k}')\rangle\frac{\tilde{\Theta}(\mathbf{k},\hat{\mathbf{n}})}{\delta(\mathbf{k})}\frac{\tilde{\Theta}^*(\mathbf{k}',\hat{\mathbf{n}}')}{\delta^*(\mathbf{k}')} \\
&= (2\pi)^3\delta^{(3)}(\mathbf{k}-\mathbf{k}')\mathcal{P}_\delta(k)\frac{\tilde{\Theta}(\mathbf{k},\hat{\mathbf{n}})}{\delta(\mathbf{k})}\frac{\tilde{\Theta}^*(\mathbf{k}',\hat{\mathbf{n}}')}{\delta^*(\mathbf{k}')},
\end{aligned}
$$

where we used the definition of the primordial perturbation power spectrum. In this expression the last two factors now depend only on the magnitude of $\mathbf{k}$ and $\mathbf{k}'$.
Now, by inserting this result in the expression for the C_ℓ (6.4) we find

$$
\begin{aligned}
C_\ell &= 2\pi\int_{-1}^{1}d\mu P_\ell(\mu)\int\frac{d^3k}{(2\pi)^3}\int\frac{d^3k}{(2\pi)^3}e^{i(\mathbf{k}-\mathbf{k}')\cdot\mathbf{x}}\langle\tilde{\Theta}(\mathbf{k},\hat{\mathbf{n}})\tilde{\Theta}^*(\mathbf{k}',\hat{\mathbf{n}}')\rangle \\
&= 2\pi\int\frac{d^3k}{(2\pi)^3}\mathcal{P}_\delta(k)\int_{-1}^{1}d\mu P_\ell(\mu)\frac{\tilde{\Theta}(\mathbf{k},\hat{\mathbf{n}})}{\delta(\mathbf{k})}\frac{\tilde{\Theta}^*(\mathbf{k},\hat{\mathbf{n}}')}{\delta^*(\mathbf{k})} \\
&= 2\pi\int\frac{dk\ k^2}{(2\pi)^3}\mathcal{P}_\delta(k)\int_{-1}^{1}d\mu P_\ell(\mu)\sum_{\ell',\ell''}\frac{\tilde{\Theta}_{\ell'}}{\delta}\frac{\tilde{\Theta}^*_{\ell''}}{\delta^*}(2\ell'+1)(2\ell''+1)i^{\ell'-\ell''}\times \\
&\qquad\times\int_0^{2\pi}d\phi\int_{-1}^{1}d\cos\theta\ P_{\ell'}(\hat{\mathbf{n}}\cdot\hat{\mathbf{k}})P_{\ell''}(\hat{\mathbf{n}}'\cdot\hat{\mathbf{k}}) \\
&\Big\downarrow \text{using} \int_0^{2\pi}d\phi\int_{-1}^{1}d\cos\theta\ P_\ell(\hat{\mathbf{k}}\cdot\hat{\mathbf{n}})P_{\ell'}(\hat{\mathbf{k}}'\cdot\hat{\mathbf{n}}') = \frac{4\pi}{2\ell+1}P_\ell(\hat{\mathbf{n}}\cdot\hat{\mathbf{n}}')\delta_{\ell\ell'} \\
&= 8\pi^2\int\frac{dk\ k^2}{(2\pi)^3}\mathcal{P}_\delta(k)\sum_{\ell'=0}^{\infty}(2\ell'+1)\left|\frac{\tilde{\Theta}_{\ell'}(\mathbf{k},\hat{\mathbf{n}})}{\delta(\mathbf{k})}\right|^2\int_{-1}^{1}d\mu P_\ell(\mu)P_{\ell'}(\mu) \\
&\Big\downarrow \text{orthogonality} \int_{-1}^{+1}d\mu\ P_\ell(\mu)P_{\ell'}(\mu) = \frac{2}{2\ell+1}\delta_{\ell\ell'} \\
&= 16\pi^2\int\frac{dk\ k^2}{(2\pi)^3}\mathcal{P}_\delta(k)\left|\frac{\tilde{\Theta}_\ell(\mathbf{k},\hat{\mathbf{n}})}{\delta(\mathbf{k})}\right|^2 = \frac{2}{\pi}\int dk\ k^2\mathcal{P}_\delta(k)\left|\frac{\tilde{\Theta}_\ell(\mathbf{k},\hat{\mathbf{n}})}{\delta(\mathbf{k})}\right|^2,
\end{aligned}
\tag{6.11}
$$

where $\mu = \cos(\hat{\mathbf{n}} \cdot \hat{\mathbf{n}}')$ and we used the orthogonality of the Legendre polynomial and that Θ is real.
Lastly, introducing the dimensionless power spectrum $\Delta_\delta^2(k) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \frac{k^3}{2\pi^2}\mathcal{P}_\delta(k)$ we obtain:

$$\boxed{C_\ell = 4\pi \int \frac{dk}{k}\ \Delta_\delta^2(k) \left| \frac{\tilde{\Theta}_\ell(\mathbf{k}, \hat{\mathbf{n}})}{\delta(\mathbf{k})} \right|^2.} \tag{6.12}$$

We ended with a formula that relates the angular power spectrum to the power spectrum of the perturbations via the so-called **transfer function** $|\frac{\Theta_\ell(\mathbf{k},\hat{\mathbf{n}})}{\delta(\mathbf{k})}|$, which describes how the perturbations generates anisotropies and that we have to find in the next sections.

6.2 Time evolution of anisotropies

In this section we want to develop the machinery needed to understand how the anisotropies of the *CMB* were generated by the primordial metric perturbations and, then, how they evolved until today. This gives us also the *transfer functions*, just by setting the amplitude of the perturbation to unity.

To tackle this problem we need to study the evolution of the phase space of photons in perturbed spacetime. Imposing the *newtonian gauge*, we can write the metric with only scalar perturbations as

$$ds^2 = -(1+2\Psi)dt^2 + a^2(t)(1-2\Phi)\delta_{ij}dx^i dx^j.$$

In appendix B.2 we showed that in this case the *Liouville operator* reads as in (B.5):

$$\hat{L}[f] = \frac{\partial f}{\partial t} + \frac{\partial f}{\partial x^i}\frac{\hat{p}^i}{a} - p\left(H - \frac{\partial \Phi}{\partial t} + \frac{\partial \Psi}{\partial x^i}\frac{\hat{p}^i}{a}\right)\frac{\partial f}{\partial p} + \text{second order terms},$$

where $p^i = \hat{p}^i p$ is the local 3-momentum.
In the above $f = f(x^\mu, p^i)$, however we know that at the background level the phase space distribution should depend only on (t, p) (due to homogeneity and isotropy of the universe). For this reason we should also decompose the distribution in:

$$f(x^\mu, \mathbf{p}) = \bar{f}(t, p) + \Upsilon(x^\mu, \mathbf{p}), \tag{6.13}$$

where Υ is the perturbation of the phase space distribution function.
We can get an expression for this perturbation considering a *blackbody radiation* distribution with a fluctuating temperature $T(x^\mu, \hat{\mathbf{p}}) = \bar{T}(1 + \Theta(x^\mu, \hat{\mathbf{p}}))$.
Note that now Θ depends on the time $(t = x^0)$ and position (x^i) of observation, other than the direction of motion of the photons, which corresponds to the direction of observation $\hat{\mathbf{n}}$ of section 6.1 (where the position and time of observation were fixed by the Earth position in spacetime). In this way, expanding in Θ we find

$$\begin{aligned}
f(x^\mu, p^i) &= \left[\exp\left\{\frac{p}{k_B\bar{T}(1+\Theta)}\right\} - 1\right]^{-1} \\
&\approx \frac{1}{e^{\frac{p}{k_B\bar{T}}} - 1} + \frac{e^{\frac{p}{k_B\bar{T}}}}{(e^{\frac{p}{k_B\bar{T}}} - 1)^2}\frac{p}{k_B\bar{T}}\Theta = \bar{f} - \Theta p\frac{\partial \bar{f}}{\partial p} \\
\implies \Upsilon &= -\Theta p \frac{\partial \bar{f}}{\partial p}.
\end{aligned}$$

Expanding the distribution function also in the Liouville operator we get, at first order

$$\hat{L}[\Upsilon] = -p\frac{\partial \bar{f}}{\partial p}\left[\frac{\partial \Theta}{\partial t} + \frac{\hat{p}^i}{a}\frac{\partial \Theta}{\partial x^i} - \frac{\partial \Psi}{\partial t} + \frac{\hat{p}^i}{a}\frac{\partial \Phi}{\partial x^i}\right], \tag{6.14}$$

where the first two terms describe free streaming (free motion of photons without scatterings) while the last two terms account for the effect of gravity.

To complete the Boltzmann equation we need to consider the first order collision term, describing Compton scatterings. A derivation of this term can be found in the book by Dodelson [10], the final result is:

$$C[\Upsilon]|_{\mathbf{CS}} = -p\frac{\partial \bar{f}}{\partial p} n_e \sigma_T \left[\Theta_0 - \Theta + \hat{\mathbf{p}} \cdot \mathbf{v}_b\right], \tag{6.15}$$

where $\mathbf{v}_b$ is the **electron bulk velocity** and Θ_0 is the **anisotropy monopole**

$$\Theta_0(x^\mu) = \frac{1}{4\pi}\int d\Omega_{\hat{\mathbf{p}}} \Theta(x^\mu, \hat{\mathbf{p}}).$$

Let's appreciate that the collision term, assuming $\mathbf{v}_b = 0$, will vanish, and thus give equilibrium, if the anisotropies $\Theta(\hat{\mathbf{p}}) = \Theta_0$.
Equating the Liouville operator (6.14) with the collision term (6.15) we obtain

$$\frac{\partial \Theta}{\partial t} + \frac{\hat{p}^i}{a}\frac{\partial \Theta}{\partial x^i} - \frac{\partial \Psi}{\partial t} + \frac{\hat{p}^i}{a}\frac{\partial \Phi}{\partial x^i} = n_e \sigma_T \left[\Theta_0 - \Theta + \hat{\mathbf{p}} \cdot \mathbf{v}_b\right] \tag{6.16}$$

which is the equation describing the dynamics of the *CMB anisotropies*. Assuming initially $\Theta = 0$, the perturbation of the metric Ψ and Φ can still generate a final non-zero anisotropy. In this sense, perturbations are source terms for Θ.
Since the above is a linear partial differential equation, it can be reduced to an ordinary differential equation by Fourier transforming the spatial coordinates. Introducing

$$\Theta(x^\mu) = \int \frac{d^3k}{(2\pi)^3} e^{i\mathbf{k}\cdot\mathbf{x}} \tilde{\Theta}(\mathbf{k}, t), \qquad \mu \overset{\text{def}}{=} \cos\theta = \frac{\mathbf{k}\cdot\hat{\mathbf{p}}}{k},$$

respectively, the Fourier transform of Θ and the cosine of the angle between $\mathbf{k}$ and $\hat{\mathbf{p}}$, and assuming that $\mathbf{v}_b$ is irrotational ($\tilde{\mathbf{v}}_b = -i\hat{\mathbf{k}}\tilde{v}_b$) we obtain in momentum space:

$$\frac{\partial \tilde{\Theta}}{\partial t} + \frac{ik\mu}{a}\tilde{\Theta} + \frac{\partial \tilde{\Psi}}{\partial t} + \frac{ik\mu}{a}\tilde{\Phi} = n_e \sigma_T \left[\tilde{\Theta}_0 - \tilde{\Theta} - i\mu\tilde{v}_b\right].$$

The above collision term (6.15) however neglects the angular dependence of Compton scatterings, by accounting also for this (as explained in [10]) a new term appears:

$$\frac{\partial \tilde{\Theta}}{\partial t} + \frac{ik\mu}{a}\tilde{\Theta} + \frac{\partial \tilde{\Psi}}{\partial t} + \frac{ik\mu}{a}\tilde{\Phi} = n_e \sigma_T \left[\tilde{\Theta}_0 - \tilde{\Theta} - i\mu\tilde{v}_b - \frac{3\mu^2 - 1}{4}\tilde{\Theta}_2\right], \tag{6.17}$$

where $\tilde{\Theta}_2 \overset{\text{def}}{=} -\frac{1}{2}\int_{-1}^{+1} d\mu \frac{3\mu^2-1}{2}\tilde{\Theta}$ is the **anisotropy quadrupole momentum**. In the next sections we will discover that this momentum plays a leading role for many phenomena.

6.2.1 Polarization from Compton scattering

In the previous section we studied how the phase space of photons evolves in a perturbed spacetime. However, we have not yet considered that photons are spin 1 particles, and thus, to fully describe them, we also need to know their polarization.

To understand how polarization can be described, let's consider a monochromatic plane wave (which we could consider as a Fourier component of a generic wave). The electric and magnetic fields of such a wave, in empty space, are not independent, due to Maxwell equations, and thus we can just focus on the electric field.
If the wave is propagating along the $\hat{\mathbf{z}}$ axis, its electric field can be written as

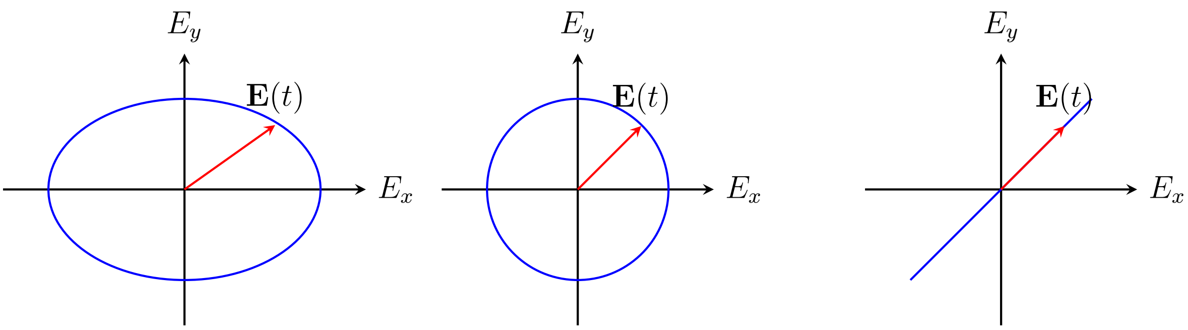
$$\mathbf{E}(z,t) = \mathrm{Re}\Big\{(E_x\hat{\mathbf{x}} + E_y\hat{\mathbf{y}})e^{ik(z-t)}\Big\},$$

where E_x and E_y are the components of the electric field in complex space. Since they are complex numbers we can decompose them in the polar representation $E_x = |E_x|e^{i\phi_x}$, $E_y = |E_y|e^{i\phi_y}$, in this way the monochromatic wave reads:

$$\mathbf{E}(z,t) = |E_x|\cos[k(z-t)]\hat{\mathbf{x}} + |E_y|\cos[k(z-t)+\phi]\hat{\mathbf{y}} \qquad \text{with } \phi = \phi_y - \phi_x.$$

This shows that the electric field, at a fixed $z = z_0$, evolves drawing an ellipse in the xy plane. Note that this ellipse can degenerate depending on the values of $|E_x|$, $|E_y|$ and ϕ:

- if $\phi = 0, \pi$ or if one of the components E_x, E_y vanishes, the ellipse degenerates into a line, we call this case **linear polarization**;
- if $\phi = \pm\frac{\pi}{2}$ and $E_x = E_y$, the ellipse degenerates into a circle, we call this case **circular polarization**.



(a) Elliptical polarization (b) Circular polarization (c) Linear polarization

Figure 6.1: The plots of the electric field in the xy plane: each point of the plot corresponds to the electric field at a given time. In the first plot (a) the general elliptical polarization is represented, while in other two plots the electric field with circular (b) and linear polarization (a) are represented.

In general, the polarization describes how the electric field, of a wave, oscillates: indeed, figure 6.1 shows that for linear polarization, for example, the electric field oscillates in a precise direction. The polarization of a photon can be described the **Stokes parameters**:

$$I \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} |E_x|^2 + |E_y|^2, \qquad Q \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} |E_x|^2 - |E_y|^2,$$
$$U \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} 2|E_x||E_y|\cos\phi, \qquad V \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} 2|E_x||E_y|\sin\phi, \tag{6.18}$$

where I is the intensity of the light while Q, U and V describe the polarization. Indeed, for linear polarized light $U = V = 0$ while Q is related to the direction of oscillation. On the other hand, for circular polarization $Q = U = 0$ while $V \neq 0$.
Circular polarization is not produced in the early universe, therefore we will set $V = 0$, so that we are describing only linearly polarized or unpolarized light.

Before proceeding, we should note that under rotations in the xy plane

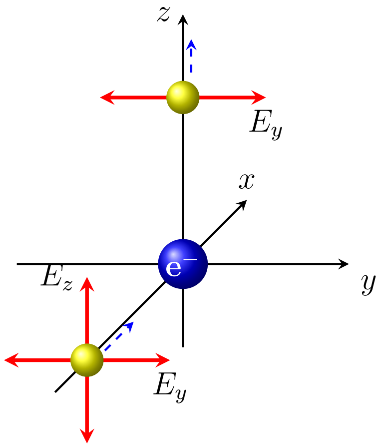
$$E_x \to E_x \cos\theta - E_y \sin\theta, \qquad E_y \to E_x \sin\theta + E_y \cos\theta,$$

the Stokes parameters will transform as

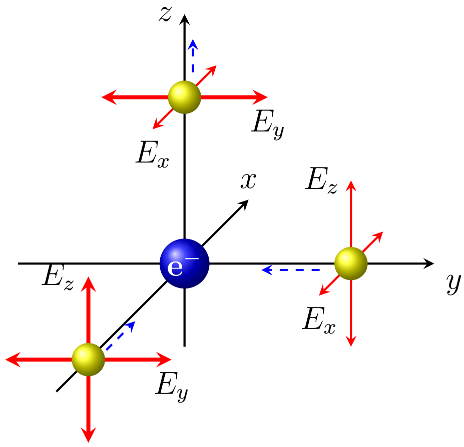
$$I \to I, \qquad Q \pm iU \to e^{\pm 2i\theta}(Q \pm iU).$$

This transformation shows that the combination $(Q \pm iU)$ transforms as a *spin-2 tensor* while I as a scalar. This observation will be crucial when will need to decompose these modes. The above transformation makes also more clear the interpretation of the parameter U: from the above we have $U' = \mathrm{Im}\big[\exp(\pm 2i\theta)(Q \pm iU)\big]$, thus for $\theta = \pm\pi/2$ we have $U' = \pm Q$, showing that U is the difference of the components of $\mathbf{E}$ along the bisectors of the x and y axis.

Now that we know how to describe polarized light, let's move to study how *Compton scattering* is influenced by polarization. Consider an electron, on which light can be scatter off, the interaction can absorb some components of the electric field, letting the other unchanged, modifying the polarization of the photon.
For example, an unpolarized photon moving along the x axis and deflected along the z axis, in the end, will have a polarization along the y axis. This is due to the simple fact that $\mathbf{E}$ and $\mathbf{B}$ must be orthogonal to the direction of motion and therefore any component along the z axis will be absorbed by the electron (as shown in figure 6.2 (a)).



(a) Unpolarized light



(b) Quadrupole momentum

Figure 6.2: Graphical depiction Compton scatterings effects on polarized light. Figure *(a)* shows an unpolarized photon scattered by an electron resulting in a linearly polarized photon. Figure *(b)* instead shows how the presence of a quadrupole momentum can generate polarized photons by the scatterings: thicker vectors represents more intense electric fields, thus "hotter" photons.

In the general case, consider some incoming radiation with polarization $\boldsymbol{\epsilon}_i'$[3] which gets

[3] $\boldsymbol{\epsilon}_i'$ are the versors onto which the $\mathbf{E}$ decomposes.

scattered off by an electron. The deflected radiation will instead have a polarization $\boldsymbol{\epsilon}_i$. Without loss of generality, we can orient our coordinate axis such that the outgoing radiation is travelling along the z axis and the polarization $\boldsymbol{\epsilon}_1 = \hat{\mathbf{x}}$ and $\boldsymbol{\epsilon}_2 = \hat{\mathbf{y}}$.
The parameter Q, after the scattering, can be estimated decomposing the incoming polarization on the outgoing one and then averaging over all possible incoming photons:

$$Q \propto \int d\Omega_{in} f_{\text{in}}(\hat{\mathbf{n}}') \sum_{i=1}^{2} \left[|\boldsymbol{\epsilon}_i' \cdot \hat{\mathbf{x}}|^2 - |\boldsymbol{\epsilon}_i' \cdot \hat{\mathbf{y}}|^2 \right],$$

where f_{in} is the phase space distribution of the incoming photons.
As a function of the polar incoming angles, the incoming polarization can be written as

$$\begin{aligned}\boldsymbol{\epsilon}_1'(\theta', \phi') &= (\cos\theta' \cos\phi', \cos\theta' \sin\phi', -\sin\theta'),\\ \boldsymbol{\epsilon}_2'(\theta', \phi') &= (-\sin\phi', \cos\theta', 0).\end{aligned}$$

Once inserted in the previous integral we find

$$\begin{aligned}Q &\propto \int d\Omega_{in} f_{\text{in}}(\hat{\mathbf{n}}') \left[\cos^2\theta' \cos^2\phi' + \sin^2\phi' - \cos^2\theta' \sin^2\phi' - \cos^2\phi' \right]\\ &\propto \int d\Omega_{in} f_{\text{in}}(\hat{\mathbf{n}}') (\sin^2\theta' \cos 2\phi') \propto \int d\Omega_{\text{in}} f_{\text{in}}(\hat{\mathbf{n}}') \left[Y_{2,2}(\hat{\mathbf{n}}') + Y_{2,-2}(\hat{\mathbf{n}}') \right],\end{aligned}$$

where we recognized, in the last step, that $\sin^2\phi' \cos 2\phi'$ is proportional to the sum of two spherical harmonics[4].
Now, considering perturbations of the temperature in f_{in}, as in (6.13), we discover that, since the integral picks the modes with $\ell = 2$, polarization will be generated through Compton scatterings by the quadrupole momentum Θ_2. Similar calculations can lead to the same conclusion for the parameter U.
Intuitively, this can be understood considering two unpolarized photons, with different energies (thus temperatures when we consider an ensemble), travelling towards an electron from orthogonal directions: this simplified setting corresponds to a quadrupole momentum of the anisotropies. Then, a photon scattered in the z direction will then have one component of its electric field given by the first photon and the other component from the second photon, as represented in figure 6.2 (b). Since the two photons have different energies, the electric field components of the scattered photon will be different, giving a polarization to it.

To appropriately describe polarization in the context of anisotropies we must develop a proper framework. Let's start considering linear polarized light propagating in the z direction: the stokes parameter Q will therefore measure the difference of the energy density (recall $\rho \propto \mathbf{E}^2$) associated to the electric field components E_x and E_y.
This radiation can be seen as the superposition of two gasses of photons: each one will be made by photons described by one of the two components of the electric field. Then, each gas will have its own phase space distribution: f_x and f_y. Note that if the two distributions are identical the light turns out to be unpolarized with respect to Q: indeed the two gasses would have the same temperature and thus the two components of $\mathbf{E}$ would be equal, giving $Q = 0$[5]. Hence, we need to consider temperature anisotropies between

[4]Recall that $Y_{\ell,\pm\ell}(\theta, \phi) = \frac{(\mp)^\ell}{2^\ell \ell!} \sqrt{\frac{(2\ell+1)!}{4\pi}} \sin^\ell\theta \, e^{\pm i\ell\phi}$ and therefore $Y_{2,2} + Y_{2,-2} \propto sin^2\theta \cos 2\phi$.
[5]For now, we just consider Q later on we will also find a way to describe U.

the two distributions: to better describe these we introduce a *phase space matrix*

$$\mathcal{F}_{\text{unpol}} \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \begin{pmatrix} f_x(\bar{T}) & 0 \\ 0 & f_y(\bar{T}) \end{pmatrix} \xrightarrow{\text{polarization}} \mathcal{F} \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \begin{pmatrix} f_x(\bar{T}[1+\Theta_x]) & 0 \\ 0 & f_y(\bar{T}[1+\Theta_y]) \end{pmatrix}, \tag{6.19}$$

where $\Theta_x(x^\mu, \mathbf{n})$ and $\Theta_y(x^\mu, \mathbf{n})$ are the fluctuations around the mean temperature $\bar{T}$. The total phase space distribution is then recovered by taking the trace of the above matrices $f = \text{Tr}(\mathcal{F})/2$, which corresponds to the average of the components.
From these two anisotropies we can define, recalling that $T^4 \propto \rho \propto \mathbf{E}^2$,

$$\begin{aligned} \Theta_Q &\stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \Theta_x - \Theta_y \\ &= \frac{\Delta T_x - \Delta T_y}{\bar{T}} = \frac{\Delta\rho_x - \Delta\rho_y}{4\bar{\rho}} = \frac{(E_x^2 - \mathbf{E}^2) - (E_x^2 - \mathbf{E}^2)}{4\mathbf{E}^2} = \frac{Q}{4I}, \end{aligned} \tag{6.20}$$

where we used the approximation $\Delta\rho/\rho \propto 4\Delta T/T$ for small perturbations.
The same hols for $\Theta_U = U/(4I)$, since we just need to rotate the axis to turn $Q \to U$, then we can repeat the above calculations and rotate everything back.
Lastly, we want to describe polarization by a single parameter, this can be done exploiting rotations. Suppose we have described chosen the axis such that $Q \neq 0$ and $U = 0$, in this way Θ_Q describes the anisotropies related to the "amplitude" of polarization and Θ_U is not needed. To allow for a generic orientation of the axis we rotate the xy plane defining the amplitude Θ_P to correspond to the previous Θ_Q, which now instead reads

$$\Theta_Q = \Theta_P \cos 2\phi, \qquad \text{while } \Theta_U = \Theta_P \sin 2\phi.$$

Note that the above discussion holds only for monochromatic waves. When dealing with a Fourier decomposition these two last formulae hold only in the limit $\hat{\mathbf{n}} \cdot \hat{\mathbf{k}} \ll 1$, with $\hat{\mathbf{n}}$ direction of propagation of the full wave.

Θ_P will then evolve with its own Boltzmann equation: all the physics described previously is unchanged, however we need to account for Compton scattering effect con polarization. Indeed, we already discussed that the quadrupole $\tilde{\Theta}_2$ will polarize scattered photons, therefore a collision term proportional to Θ_2 must be added to the Boltzmann equation (6.16). Furthermore, if polarization is not sourced, through Compton scattering the radiation will gradually become unpolarized. This means that now a term proportional to $-\tilde{\Theta}_P$ must be added as a collision contribution. The final result, derived in [3], is the Boltzmann equation for the polarization anisotropy:

$$\frac{\partial \tilde{\Theta}_P}{\partial t} + \frac{ik\mu}{a}\tilde{\Theta}_P = -n_e\sigma_T\left[\tilde{\Theta}_P + \frac{1}{2}\Big(1 - P_2(\mu)\Big)\Pi\right], \tag{6.21}$$

where $\Pi = \tilde{\Theta}_2 + \tilde{\Theta}_{P,2} + \tilde{\Theta}_{P,0}$ and $P_2(\mu) = \frac{3\mu^2-1}{2}$ is the order 2 Legendre polynomial. Then, polarization will affect also the regular collision term for Compton scattering, hence equation (6.16) must be corrected:

$$\frac{\partial\tilde{\Theta}}{\partial t} + \frac{ik\mu}{a}\tilde{\Theta} + \frac{\partial\tilde{\Psi}}{\partial t} + \frac{ik\mu}{a}\tilde{\Phi} = n_e\sigma_T\left[\tilde{\Theta}_0 - \tilde{\Theta} - i\mu\tilde{v}_b - \frac{1}{4}P_2(\mu)\Pi\right]. \tag{6.22}$$

6.2.2 Multipole expansion of the Boltzmann equation

In section 6.2.1 we obtained the differential equations (6.22) and (6.21) governing the time evolution of the anisotropies in the CMB. To end our discussion of the time evolution of the anisotropies we want to expand these equations in multipoles.

Since the CMB is observed in the sky, spherical harmonics are the natural basis to use to project the anisotropies. The fact that the equations (6.22) and (6.21) depend only on $\mu = \hat{\mathbf{p}} \cdot \hat{\mathbf{k}}$, corresponds to a rotational symmetry of the system around one of these two vectors. By using spherical polar coordinates, such that the vector $\hat{\mathbf{k}}$ lies on the z axis, the above symmetry corresponds to a rotational symmetry of the azimuthal angle ϕ. Considering that $Y_{\ell m} \propto e^{im\phi}$, we immediately recognize that such symmetry is respected only by spherical harmonics with $m = 0$ and these precisely corresponds to the Legendre polynomials. Therefore, for scalar perturbation, we can limit ourselves to a multipole expansion on the Legendre polynomials, without worrying of all the spherical harmonics.

By multiplying the (6.22) by the order ℓ Legendre polynomial $P_\ell(\mu) \times i^\ell/2$ and integrating over μ, we can exploit the orthogonality of the Legendre polynomials as follows.

- $\frac{\partial\tilde{\Theta}}{\partial t}$ and $n_e\sigma_T\tilde{\Theta}$ depending on μ in this expansion will give contributions corresponding respectively to $\frac{\partial\tilde{\Theta}_\ell}{\partial t}$ and $n_e\sigma_T\tilde{\Theta}_\ell$ (from the expansion definition (6.9)).

- $\frac{\partial\tilde{\Psi}}{\partial t}$ and $n_e\sigma_T\tilde{\Theta}_0$ have no μ dependence, which corresponds to the zeroth order Legendre polynomial $P_0(\mu) = 1$, and thus they only contribute to the $\ell = 0$ equation.

- $\tilde{\Phi}$ and $n_e\sigma_T\tilde{v}_b$ are multiplied by $P_1(\mu) = \mu$, giving contributions only to $\ell = 1$ equation, while Π is multiplied by $P_2(\mu) = \frac{3\mu^2-1}{2}$, contributing only to $\ell = 2$ equation. Note that these terms must also be multiplied by a factor corresponding to the integral of their respective Legendre polynomial squared, since they don't contain any $\tilde{\Theta}$ function to be expanded.

- $\frac{ik\mu}{a}\tilde{\Theta}$ is instead more complicated since it is the product of two functions depending on μ. Bonnet's formula (6.10) allows us to simplify the corresponding integral

$$\frac{i^\ell}{2}\int_{-1}^{+1} d\mu\ \mu P_\ell(\mu)\tilde{\Theta} = \frac{i^\ell}{2}\int_{-1}^{+1} d\mu \left[\frac{\ell+1}{2\ell+1}P_{\ell+1}(\mu) + \frac{\ell}{2\ell+1}P_{\ell-1}(\mu)\right]\tilde{\Theta},$$

  in this way this will give contributions to all the equations coupling them together.

Putting all of this together we obtain the following coupled system of differential equations

$$\dot{\tilde{\Theta}}_0 = -\frac{k}{a}\tilde{\Theta}_1 - \dot{\tilde{\Psi}} \tag{6.23a}$$

$$\dot{\tilde{\Theta}}_1 = \frac{k}{3a}\tilde{\Theta}_0 - \frac{2k}{3a}\tilde{\Theta}_2 + \frac{k}{3}\tilde{\Phi} - n_e\sigma_T\left[\tilde{\Theta}_1 - \frac{\tilde{v}_b}{3}\right] \tag{6.23b}$$

$$\dot{\tilde{\Theta}}_\ell = \frac{\ell k}{(2\ell+1)a}\tilde{\Theta}_{\ell-1} - \frac{(\ell+1)k}{(2\ell+1)a}\tilde{\Theta}_{\ell+1} - n_e\sigma_T\left[\tilde{\Theta}_\ell - \frac{\delta_{\ell,2}}{10}\Pi\right] \qquad \ell \geq 2, \tag{6.23c}$$

Similarly, equation (6.21) will result in the following system of differential equations

$$\dot{\tilde{\Theta}}_{P,0} = -\frac{k}{a}\tilde{\Theta}_{P,1} - n_e\sigma_T\left[\tilde{\Theta}_{P,0} - \frac{1}{2}\Pi\right] \tag{6.24a}$$

$$\dot{\tilde{\Theta}}_{P,\ell} = \frac{\ell k}{(2\ell+1)a}\tilde{\Theta}_{P,\ell-1} - \frac{(\ell+1)k}{(2\ell+1)a}\tilde{\Theta}_{P,\ell+1} - n_e\sigma_T\left[\tilde{\Theta}_{P,\ell} - \frac{\delta_{\ell,2}}{10}\Pi\right] \qquad \ell \geq 1,. \tag{6.24b}$$

Equations (6.23) and (6.24) are not the full system of coupled equations, indeed these equations depend on the potential $\tilde{\Psi}$ and $\tilde{\Phi}$ and on the electron bulk velocity $\tilde{v}_b$. The differential equations governing these quantities must then be added to the ones above and solved all together.
Note that, in the above equations, Ψ and Φ appears only in the equation with $\ell = 0, 1$: this means that primordial perturbations source directly only the first two momenta of the anisotropies. Then, since all the equations are coupled together, the dynamics of the anisotropies will give rise to the other momenta.

6.2.3 Polarization anisotropies power spectrum

We already discussed that, in order to completely describe photons (thus the CMB), we also need to account for polarization. It is therefore natural to define a power spectrum for the polarization anisotropies, which can be done similarly as for the temperature.

We want to expand onto the sky (really the dependence from the direction of observation $\hat{\mathbf{n}}$) Θ_Q and $\Theta_U U$, however we showed, in section 6.2.1 that under a rotation the combination $Q \pm iU$ (and thus their respective Θs) will transform as a spin 2 fields. This means that we cannot resort to the usual spherical harmonics decomposition, instead we must use **spin-weighted spherical harmonics** $Y^{\pm 2}_{\ell m}$. In Fourier space such expansion reads. This expansion reads

$$(\Theta_Q \pm i\Theta_U)(\hat{\mathbf{n}}) = \sum_{\ell m} Y^{\pm 2}_{\ell m}(\hat{\mathbf{n}}) a^{\pm 2}_{\ell m}, \tag{6.25}$$

The coefficients we obtained can be then combined into parity even or odd combinations that turns out to be the multipoles of the so called **E-modes** and **B-modes**:

$$a^E_{\ell m} \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} -\frac{a^2_{\ell m} + a^{-2}_{\ell m}}{2}, \qquad E(\hat{\mathbf{n}}) = \sum_{\ell m} a^E_{\ell m} Y_{\ell m}(\hat{\mathbf{n}}),$$

$$a^B_{\ell m} \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \frac{a^2_{\ell m} - a^{-2}_{\ell m}}{2i} \qquad B(\hat{\mathbf{n}}) = \sum_{\ell m} a^B_{\ell m} Y_{\ell m}(\hat{\mathbf{n}}).$$

The power spectra of the polarization can then be defined, as usual, as

$$\langle a^E_{\ell m} a^{E*}_{\ell' m'}\rangle \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} C^{EE}_\ell \delta_{\ell\ell'}\delta_{mm'}, \tag{6.26}$$

$$\langle a^B_{\ell m} a^{B*}_{\ell' m'}\rangle \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} C^{BB}_\ell \delta_{\ell\ell'}\delta_{mm'}, \tag{6.27}$$

$$\langle a_{\ell m} a^{E*}_{\ell' m'}\rangle \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} C^{TE}_\ell \delta_{\ell\ell'}\delta_{mm'}. \tag{6.28}$$

6.3 Tensor perturbations effects on the CMB

In the previous sections we focused on how the scalar perturbations interact with the CMB generating anisotropies. We will instead now study how tensor perturbations, namely gravitational waves produced during inflation, affects the evolution of the plasma of photons and what kind of anisotropies are sourced by them.

In appendix B.4 we showed that, considering tensor perturbed metric

$$ds^2 = -dt^2 + a^2(\delta_{ij}h_{ij})dx^d x^j,$$

the *Liouville operator* reads as in (B.8)

$$\hat{\mathbf{L}}[f] = \frac{\partial f}{\partial t} + \frac{\hat{p}^i}{a}\frac{\partial f}{\partial x^i} - \frac{1}{2}\frac{\partial f}{\partial t}\dot{h}_{ij}\hat{p}^i\hat{p}^j + \text{second order terms},$$

where $p^i = p\,\hat{p}^i$ is the local 3-momentum of a photon and f the phase space distribution.

To obtain the equation describing the evolution of anisotropies, we must expand the photon phase space distribution on a blackbody radiation background $(\bar{f}(t,p) + \Upsilon(x^\mu, \mathbf{p}))$ and assume that the temperature is perturbed as $T(x^\mu, \hat{\mathbf{p}}) = \bar{T}(1 + \Theta(x^\mu, \hat{\mathbf{p}}))$. Proceeding in the same way as in section 6.2 with the above Liouville operator, we obtain the Liouville operator for the distribution perturbation

$$\hat{\mathbf{L}}[\Upsilon] = -p\frac{\partial \bar{f}}{\partial p}\left[\frac{\partial \Theta}{\partial t} + \frac{\hat{p}^i}{a}\frac{\partial \Theta}{\partial x^i} + \frac{1}{2}\dot{h}_{ij}\hat{p}^i\hat{p}^j\right].$$

At this point we need to add the first order collision term associated to Compton scattering. For now let's consider the simplified form (6.15). Using Boltzmann equation and canceling out the common factor $-p\frac{\partial \bar{f}}{\partial t}$ from both sides, as in section 6.2, we get the differential equation that describes the time evolution of the CMB anisotropies in presence of tensor perturbations

$$\frac{\partial \Theta}{\partial t} + \frac{\hat{p}^i}{a}\frac{\partial \Theta}{\partial x^i} + \frac{1}{2}\dot{h}_{ij}\hat{p}^i\hat{p}^j = n_e\sigma_T\Big[\Theta_0 - \Theta + \hat{\mathbf{p}}\cdot\mathbf{v}_b\Big]. \tag{6.29}$$

Again, note that the tensor perturbations can be a source for the anisotropies, as for the scalar case.

6.3.1 Coupling of tensors pertubations to anisotropies

Previously, to expand equation (6.16), we Fourier transformed $\Theta(t, \mathbf{x}, \hat{\mathbf{p}})$ and then expanded it in Legendre polynomials. However, this last step was justified (in section 6.2.2) by noting that the equations depended only on the cosine of angle between the direction of motion of the photon $\hat{\mathbf{p}}$ and the wave number vector of the Fourier transform $\mathbf{k}$. This corresponded to a rotational symmetry around one of the above vectors that implied that Legendre polynomials were the appropriate basis to expand on. We shall now study equation (6.29), and its symmetries, to understand what will now be the right basis to use for this expansion.

To begin, let's recall that, being traceless transverse, in Fourier space h_{ij} can be separated in two independent polarizations

$$0 = \partial^i h_{ij} = \int \frac{d^3k}{(2\pi)^3} e^{\mathbf{k}\cdot\mathbf{x}} \tilde{h}_{ij} k^i \xrightarrow[\text{Symmetric}]{\text{Traceless}} \tilde{h}_{ij} = \tilde{h}_\times \mathbf{e}^\times_{ij} + \tilde{h}_+ \mathbf{e}^+_{ij} = \begin{pmatrix} \tilde{h}_\times & \tilde{h}_+ & 0 \\ \tilde{h}_+ & -\tilde{h}_\times & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}.$$

Now, the only term in equation (6.29) that could give a more complicated angular dependence (that just $\cos\theta$) is $\dot{h}_{ij}\hat{p}^i\hat{p}^j$: considering spherical polar coordinates (r, θ, ϕ) with $\mathbf{k} \parallel \hat{\mathbf{z}}$, once Fourier transformed, this term will be proportional to

$$\hat{\mathbf{p}} = (\sin\theta\cos\phi, \sin\theta\sin\phi, \cos\theta) \quad \Rightarrow \quad (\mathbf{e}^\times_{ij} + \mathbf{e}^+_{ij})\hat{p}^i\hat{p}^j = \sin^2\theta(\cos 2\phi + \sin 2\phi).$$

This clearly shows that anisotropies coupled to tensor perturbations can no longer be decomposed on Legendre polynomials, since the azimuthal symmetry is now spoiled by the explicit dependence on ϕ.

To individuate the appropriate basis for the spherical harmonics expansion, let's use the basis introduced by Hu and White in [12]

$$h_{ij} = -\sqrt{\frac{3}{2}}(h^{(+)}\mathbf{e}^{(+)}_{ij} + h^{(-)}\mathbf{e}^{(-)}_{ij}) \quad \text{with } \mathbf{e}^{(+)} = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & +i & 0 \\ +i & -1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \ \mathbf{e}^{(-)} = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & -i & 0 \\ -i & -1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}. \tag{6.30}$$

Comparing this definition and the previous basis, we can easily find the transformation between the two polarizations

$$h_\times = -\sqrt{\frac{3}{2}}(h^{(+)} + h^{(-)}), \qquad h^{(+)} = -\frac{1}{\sqrt{6}}(h_\times - ih_+),$$
$$h_+ = -i\sqrt{\frac{3}{2}}(h^{(+)} - h^{(-)}), \qquad h^{(-)} = -\frac{1}{\sqrt{6}}(h_\times + ih_+).$$

Let's now project the versor $\hat{\mathbf{p}}$, defined as above, onto $\mathbf{e}^{(\pm)}$,

$$\mathbf{e}^{(\pm)}_{ij}\hat{p}^i\hat{p}^j = \sin^2\theta[\cos^2\phi - \sin^2\phi \pm 2i\sin\phi\cos\phi] = \sin^2\theta e^{\pm i2\phi},$$

immediately we should recognize that this term is proportional to the spherical harmonics $Y_{2,\pm 2}(\theta, \phi) = \frac{1}{4}\sqrt{\frac{15}{2\pi}}\sin^2\theta\, e^{\pm i2\phi}$. This shows that the appropriate basis for the expansion of the anisotropies are the spherical harmonics $Y_{\ell m}$ with $m = \pm 2$, since they all posses the same azimuthal symmetry $Y_{\ell m} \propto e^{\pm i2\phi}$ as the tensor term in (6.29).

Following Hu and White [12] convention, we will use the following multipole expansion for the anisotropies

$$\Theta(t, \mathbf{x}, \hat{\mathbf{p}}) = \int \frac{d^3k}{(2\pi)^3} e^{i\mathbf{k}\cdot\mathbf{x}} \sum_{\ell m} (-i)^\ell \sqrt{\frac{4\pi}{2\ell+1}} Y_{\ell m}(\hat{\mathbf{p}}) \tilde{\Theta}^{(m)}_\ell(t, \mathbf{k}), \tag{6.31}$$

in which we will only use the multipoles with $m = \pm 2$, for the reasons we just explained. Note that for $m = 0$, since $Y_{\ell 0} = \sqrt{\frac{2\ell+1}{4\pi}} P_\ell(\cos\theta)$, we recover the Legendre polynomials expansion used for scalar perturbations. In this case the sum over the $2\ell + 1$ different

values of m will result in the correspondence $\tilde{\Theta}_\ell^{(0)} = (2\ell+1)\tilde{\Theta}_\ell$.
Lastly, we shall note that the normalization of the new polarization (6.30) is such that

$$\begin{aligned}\frac{1}{2}\dot{\tilde{h}}_{ij}\hat{p}^i\hat{p}^j &= \frac{1}{2}\Big(-\sqrt{\frac{3}{2}}\Big)\Big[\dot{\tilde{h}}^{(+)}\sin^2\theta e^{i2\phi} + \dot{\tilde{h}}^{(-)}\sin^2\theta e^{-i2\phi}\Big]\\ &= -\sqrt{\frac{4\pi}{5}}\Big[\dot{\tilde{h}}^{(+)}Y_{2,2}(\hat{\mathbf{p}}) + \dot{\tilde{h}}^{(-)}Y_{2,-2}(\hat{\mathbf{p}})\Big],\end{aligned}$$

where the factor $-\sqrt{\frac{4\pi}{5}}$ precisely corresponds to $i^\ell\sqrt{\frac{4\pi}{2\ell+1}}|_{\ell=2}$, which is also the factor that get all the others $\tilde{\Theta}_2^{(2)}$ in the expansion. In this way the contribution of the tensor perturbation to the multipole expansion of equation (6.29), with $\ell = 2$ and $m = \pm 2$, will be exactly $\dot{\tilde{h}}^{(\pm)}$.

6.3.2 Multipole expansion of tensor induced anisotropies

Knowing that tensor perturbations are projected in the sky onto spherical harmonics with $m = \pm 2$ while scalar perturbations are projected onto spherical harmonics with $m = 0$, by their orthogonality, we can expand Θ in multipoles using only $Y_{\ell,\pm 2}$. In this way we effectively decoupled the multipoles generated by tensor perturbations and the scalar ones.

First, we move to Fourier space where the equation describing anisotropies (6.29) reads

$$\frac{\partial\tilde{\Theta}}{\partial t} + i\frac{k\cos\theta}{a}\tilde{\Theta} - \sqrt{\frac{4\pi}{5}}\Big[\dot{\tilde{h}}^{(+)}Y_{2,2}(\hat{\mathbf{p}}) + \dot{\tilde{h}}^{(-)}Y_{2,-2}(\hat{\mathbf{p}})\Big] = n_e\sigma_T\Big[\tilde{\Theta}_0 - \tilde{\Theta} + k\tilde{v}_b\cos\theta\Big],$$

in which we assumed that $\mathbf{v}_b$ is irrotational.
Now, the expansion in spherical harmonics (6.31) yields

$$\tilde{\Theta}_\ell^{(m)}(\mathbf{k}) = i^\ell\sqrt{\frac{2\ell+1}{4\pi}}\int d\Omega_{\hat{\mathbf{p}}}\tilde{\Theta}(\mathbf{x},\hat{\mathbf{p}})Y^*_{\ell,m}(\theta,\phi),$$

therefore, upon integration of the equation above we can decompose it in a set of ordinary differential equations, one for each multipole $\Theta_\ell^{(m)}$.
However, similarly to what happened in section 6.2.2, we obtain from the second term on the left-hand side a contribution proportional to $Y^*_{\ell m}(\theta,\phi)\cos\theta$. The proprieties of spherical harmonics allows to simplify this term as follows

$$\cos\theta Y_{\ell m}(\theta,\phi) = \sqrt{\frac{4\pi}{3}}Y_{10}Y_{\ell m} = \sqrt{\frac{\ell^2-m^2}{(2\ell-1)(2\ell+1)}}Y_{\ell-1,m} + \sqrt{\frac{(\ell+1)^2-m^2}{(2\ell+3)(2\ell+1)}}Y_{\ell+1,m}$$

and upon integration we therefore also get contributions from other multipoles.
In this way equation (6.29) will be decomposed into

$$\dot{\tilde{\Theta}}_2^{(\pm 2)} = -\frac{\sqrt{5}}{7a}k\tilde{\Theta}_3^{(\pm 2)} - n_e\sigma_T\tilde{\Theta}_2^{(\pm 2)} - \dot{\tilde{h}}^{(\pm)} \tag{6.32a}$$

$$\dot{\tilde{\Theta}}_\ell^{(\pm 2)} = \frac{k}{a}\Big[\frac{\sqrt{\ell^2-4}}{2\ell-1}\tilde{\Theta}_{\ell-1}^{(\pm 2)} - \frac{\sqrt{(\ell+1)^2-4}}{2\ell+3}\tilde{\Theta}_{\ell+1}^{(\pm 2)}\Big] - n_e\sigma_T\tilde{\Theta}_\ell^{(\pm 2)} \quad \ell \geq 3, \tag{6.32b}$$

where the contributions from $\tilde{\Theta}_0$ and $\tilde{v}_b$ are not appearing since they are multiplied by the $m = 0$ spherical harmonics. Note that this time the primordial perturbations directly source a quadrupole momentum, that then can source the higher momenta.

As we discussed in section 6.2.1 the Compton scattering is influenced by the polarization of incoming and outgoing photons. For this reason we must add corrections to the above equations, to do so we must first describe the dynamics of the polarization.
The proper expansion to decouple the Boltzmann equation is a similar expansion we used in section 6.2.3: in Fourier space we will follow the convention of Chluba [7], to be consistent with the previous expansions,

$$(\Theta_Q \pm i\Theta_U)(\mathbf{x}, \hat{\mathbf{p}}) = \int \frac{d^3k}{(2\pi)^3} e^{i\mathbf{k}\cdot\mathbf{x}} \sum_{\ell m} (-i)^\ell \sqrt{\frac{4\pi}{2\ell+1}} Y^{\pm 2}_{\ell m}(\hat{\mathbf{p}}) (\tilde{E}^{(m)}_\ell \pm i\tilde{B}^{(m)}_\ell),$$

where $Y^{\pm 2}_{\ell m}$ are again the *spin weighted spherical harmonics*. We already discussed that, while the free streaming of photons is not influenced by the polarization, the quadrupole of the anisotropies sources polarized light and then, when not produced, at equilibrium we should obtain unpolarized light. This means that the equation for the dynamics of polarization anisotropies should be similar[6] to the regular $\tilde{\Theta}^{(\pm 2)}$ plus source terms for $\tilde{\Theta}_2$ and $-\tilde{E}^{(\pm 2)}_\ell$, $-\tilde{B}^{(\pm 2)}_\ell$. The full derivation of these equations has been done by Hu and White in [12]; the final result reads

$$\begin{aligned}
\dot{\tilde{E}}^{(\pm 2)}_\ell &= \frac{k}{a}\left[\frac{\ell^2-4}{\ell(2\ell-1)}\tilde{E}^{(\pm 2)}_{\ell-1} - \frac{\pm 4}{\ell(\ell+1)}\tilde{B}^{(\pm 2)}_\ell - \frac{(\ell+1)^2-4}{(\ell+1)(2\ell+3)}\tilde{E}^{(\pm 2)}_{\ell+1}\right] + \\
&\qquad - n_e\sigma_T\left[\tilde{E}^{(\pm 2)}_\ell + \sqrt{6}\Pi^{(\pm 2)}\delta_{\ell,2}\right], \qquad (6.33a)\\
\dot{\tilde{B}}^{(\pm 2)}_\ell &= \frac{k}{a}\left[\frac{\ell^2-4}{\ell(2\ell-1)}\tilde{B}^{(\pm 2)}_{\ell-1} - \frac{\pm 4}{\ell(\ell+1)}\tilde{E}^{(\pm 2)}_\ell + \frac{(\ell+1)^2-4}{(\ell+1)(2\ell+3)}\tilde{B}^{(\pm 2)}_{\ell+1}\right] + \\
&\qquad - n_e\sigma_T\tilde{B}^{(\pm 2)}_\ell, \qquad (6.33b)\\
&\text{with} \quad \Pi^{(\pm 2)} = \frac{1}{10}\left[\tilde{\Theta}^{(\pm 2)}_2 - \sqrt{6}\tilde{E}^{(\pm 2)}_2\right].
\end{aligned}$$

In a similar way, also the equations for the anisotropies must be corrected, giving

$$\dot{\tilde{\Theta}}^{(\pm 2)}_2 = -\frac{\sqrt{5}}{7a}k\tilde{\Theta}^{(\pm 2)}_3 + n_e\sigma_T\left[\Pi^{(\pm 2)} - \tilde{\Theta}^{(\pm 2)}_2\right] - \dot{\tilde{h}}^{(\pm)}, \qquad (6.34a)$$

$$\dot{\tilde{\Theta}}^{(\pm 2)}_\ell = \frac{k}{a}\left[\frac{\sqrt{\ell^2-4}}{2\ell-1}\tilde{\Theta}^{(\pm 2)}_{\ell-1} - \frac{\sqrt{(\ell+1)^2-4}}{2\ell+3}\tilde{\Theta}^{(\pm 2)}_{\ell+1}\right] - n_e\sigma_T\tilde{\Theta}^{(\pm 2)}_\ell \quad \ell \geq 3. \qquad (6.34b)$$

Let's stop for a second to appreciate that the equations (6.34), (6.33a) and (6.33b) do not mix the ± 2 modes. Furthermore, for both values of m the equations for $\tilde{\Theta}^{(m)}_\ell$ read the same, this means that we can study only the $m = 2$ modes and then use the results to obtain the $m = -2$ ones. However this does not hold for the polarizations.

[6] The numerical factors will change due to the different relations between spin-weighted spherical harmonics and the regular ones. A comprehensive guide to these functions can be found in the first part of [12].

6.4 Approximate solutions for the dynamics of the anisotropies

All the differential equations we derived are pretty hare to solve analytically, since they are strongly coupled and in theory they are an infinite number (as much as the number of multipoles). Usually we resort to numerical methods to obtain exact results, however some approximations can be useful to understand the general behavior of the CMB or even to simplify some numerical calculations.

6.4.1 The tight coupling approximation

At early times, when the plasma was denser and hotter, the mean free path of photons was very small and the rate of Compton scattering was very high. We will show that in this regime only the first two multipoles are relevant to describe fully the plasma. In this limit the anisotropies behave similarly to a fluid that can be fully described by just two parameters: its density and velocity field.

The guiding idea behind the tight coupling approximations is that the scatterings between baryons and photons, in this limit, is the only relevant interaction that determines the dynamics of the anisotropies. This is equivalent to consider the limit in which $n_e\sigma_T \gg 1$, which means that the mean free path ($\propto \frac{1}{n_e\sigma_T}$) is very small. Starting from scalar perturbations, in equation (6.23c) we can drop the time derivative, since it is negligible with respect to the terms multiplied by $n_e\sigma_T$. In this way we are left with

$$\frac{\ell k}{(2\ell+1)a}\tilde{\Theta}_{\ell-1} - n_e\sigma_T\left[\tilde{\Theta}_\ell - \frac{\delta_{\ell,2}}{10}\Pi\right] = -\frac{(\ell+1)k}{(2\ell+1)a}\tilde{\Theta}_{\ell+1},$$

from which we can note that the term $\tilde{\Theta}_{\ell+1}$ is small compared to $\tilde{\Theta}_{\ell-1}$. This essentially prove that only the first few moments are relevant while higher multipoles are always smaller and smaller as ℓ increases. In this limit, we can neglect all the multipoles with $\ell \geq 2$, we are thus left only with two only differential equations to be solved: equation (6.23a) and equation (6.23b) removing all Θ_ℓ with $\ell \geq 2$ (still coupled to the rest of the plasma). Similar considerations are valid for the polarization equations (6.24a) and (6.24b), which can be simplified in the same way.

Also for tensor perturbations the tight coupling limit significantly simplifies the equations of motion. Reasoning as we have just done, from equations (6.34) and (6.33) we conclude that only the multipoles with $\ell = 2$ are relevant. In this way, after having dropped the time derivatives, we are left with

$$n_e\sigma_T\left[\frac{1}{10}\Pi^{(\pm2)} - \tilde{\Theta}_2^{(\pm2)}\right] \approx \dot{\tilde{h}}^{(\pm2)}, \quad \tilde{E}_2^{(\pm2)} \approx -\sqrt{6}\Pi^{(\pm2)}, \quad \tilde{B}_2^{(\pm2)} \approx 0,$$

that using the definition of $\Pi^{(\pm2)} = \frac{1}{10}[\tilde{\Theta}_2^{(\pm2)} - \sqrt{6}\tilde{E}_2^{(\pm2)}]$ gives

$$\tilde{\Theta}_2^{(\pm2)} \approx -\frac{4\dot{\tilde{h}}^{(\pm2)}}{3n_e\sigma_T}, \qquad \tilde{E}_2^{(\pm2)} \approx -\frac{\sqrt{6}}{4}\tilde{\Theta}_2^{(\pm2)}, \qquad \tilde{B}_2^{(\pm2)} \approx 0. \tag{6.35}$$

This approximation will be particularly useful in the next chapter to study the spectral distortions associated to the dissipation of gravitational waves.

6.4.2 Improved tight coupling approximation

To conclude we want to present a simple way to improve the tight coupling approximation relaxing the approximation of stationary solutions, without spoiling the reduced number of multipoles excited. For the purpose of this work, we are going to focus primarily on tensor perturbations as illustrated in [7]. Consider equations (6.34), (6.33a) and (6.33b) with conformal time: working in tight coupling approximation we can neglect every multipole except for the quadrupoles. In this way we get

$$\begin{aligned}
\partial_\tau \tilde{\Theta}_2^{(\pm 2)} &= n_e \sigma_T a \left[\frac{9}{10} \tilde{\Theta}_2^{(\pm 2)} + \frac{\sqrt{6}}{10} \tilde{E}_2^{(\pm 2)} \right] - \partial_\tau \tilde{h}^{(\pm)}, \\
\partial_\tau \tilde{E}_2^{(\pm 2)} &= n_e \sigma_T a \left[\frac{2}{5} \tilde{E}_2^{(\pm 2)} + \frac{\sqrt{6}}{10} \tilde{\Theta}_2^{(\pm 2)} \right] - k \frac{2}{3} \tilde{B}_2^{\pm 2}, \\
\partial_\tau \tilde{B}_2^{(\pm 2)} &= n_e \sigma_T a \tilde{B}_2^{(\pm 2)} + k \frac{2}{3} \tilde{E}_2^{\pm 2}.
\end{aligned}$$

To solve these equations we should proceed with an ansatz: assume that the solution has the form $\tilde{\Theta}_2^{(2)} = A_\Theta e^{ik\tau}$, $\tilde{E}_2^{(2)} = A_E e^{ik\tau}$ and $\tilde{B}_2^{(2)} = A_B e^{ik\tau}$ and that the gravitational perturbation is $\tilde{h}^{(\pm)} = A_h e^{ik\tau}$, where we dropped the $\pm$ since the equations are the same for both cases.
In this way the above system of differential equations reduces to a system of linear equations for the coefficients

$$\begin{aligned}
ikA_\Theta &= n_e \sigma_T a \left[\frac{9}{10} A_\Theta + \frac{\sqrt{6}}{10} A_E \right] - ikA_h, \\
ikA_E &= n_e \sigma_T a \left[\frac{2}{5} A_E + \frac{\sqrt{6}}{10} A_\Theta \right] - k \frac{2}{3} A_B, \\
ikA_B &= n_e \sigma_T a A_B + k \frac{2}{3} A_E.
\end{aligned}$$

Once solved this system we find, defining $\xi \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \frac{k}{n_e \sigma_T a}$,

$$\begin{aligned}
\frac{|A_\Theta|}{\frac{4}{3} \frac{|A_h|}{n_e \sigma_T a}} &= \sqrt{\frac{1 + \frac{341}{36}\xi^2 + \frac{625}{324}\xi^4}{1 + \frac{142}{9}\xi^2 + \frac{1649}{82}\xi^4 + \frac{2500}{729}\xi^6}}, \\
\tan \phi_\Theta &= -\frac{11}{6} \xi \frac{1 + \frac{697}{99}\xi^2 + \frac{1250}{891}\xi^4}{1 + \frac{197}{18}\xi^2 + \frac{125}{54}\xi^4},
\end{aligned} \tag{6.36a}$$

$$\begin{aligned}
\frac{|A_E|}{\frac{4}{3} \frac{|A_h|}{n_e \sigma_T a}} &= \frac{\sqrt{6}}{4} \sqrt{\frac{1 + \xi^2}{1 + \frac{142}{9}\xi^2 + \frac{1649}{82}\xi^4 + \frac{2500}{729}\xi^6}}, \\
\tan(\phi_E - \pi) &= -\frac{13}{3} \xi \frac{1 + \frac{121}{117}\xi^2}{1 - \xi^2 - \frac{50}{27}\xi^4},
\end{aligned} \tag{6.36b}$$

$$\begin{aligned}
\frac{|A_B|}{\frac{4}{3} \frac{|A_h|}{n_e \sigma_T a}} &= \frac{\xi}{\sqrt{6}} \sqrt{\frac{1}{1 + \frac{142}{9}\xi^2 + \frac{1649}{82}\xi^4 + \frac{2500}{729}\xi^6}} \\
\tan(\phi_B - \pi) &= -\frac{16}{3} \xi \frac{1 + \frac{121}{117}\xi^2}{1 - \frac{19}{3}\xi^2}.
\end{aligned} \tag{6.36c}$$

Note that in the tight coupling limit $\xi \ll 1$ and indeed the equations above reduce to the previous discussed approximations with $\phi_E = \phi_B = \phi_\Theta = 0$.
This approximation also shows that as we exit the thigh coupling regimes and photons start to free stream ($\xi \gg 1$) the anisotropies start to decay as ξ^{-1}, while the polarization decays even faster as ξ^{-2}.

Chapter 7

Spectral Distortions

As the *CMB* is composed by photons, it is reasonable to think that it should be described as some black body radiation. Indeed, the measurements from COBE/FIRAS satellite [11] showed that the CMB spectrum is very compatible with this assumption.
However, many physical processes could affect the spectrum of the CMB generating some **spectral distortions** that were not detectable by the previous experiments.

In the next sections we will discuss the theory of spectral distortions and the physical processes that could generate them. Our goal is to describe how the dissipation of the primordial perturbation generates distortions.

7.1 The thermalization problem

The CMB, nowadays, is the relic of the primordial plasma photon component that, at early times, filled the universe. The spectrum that we observe today is influenced by the interactions that occurred between the components of the plasma. For example, several processes can inject energy that then, through scatterings, will be redistributed in the plasma, recovering equilibrium. The problem of determining how equilibrium is reached is usually referred as the **thermalization problem**.

To predict the final spectrum of the CMB, we need to understand how these interactions influenced the evolution of the phase space of the photons: as we already know, this is accomplished by the **Boltzmann equation**.
In the early universe, photons are mainly subject to scattering processes with electrons and light nuclei (Hydrogen and Helium). To describe these process it is useful to introduce the *dimensionless frequency*

$$x \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \frac{\nu}{k_B T_z}, \qquad T_z \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} T_0(1+z), \tag{7.1}$$

where T_0 is the present temperature of photons and T_z is the temperature that would have a gas of decoupled photons at redshift z. In this way x is a *time invariant variable*, since the redshift $\nu = \nu_0(1+z)$ cancels the time dependence of the temperature T_z, leaving only the today observed frequency and temperature. The use of this variable strongly simplifies the Boltzmann equation. Indeed, neglecting perturbations, the phase space distribution function is just a function of time and energy only. We can then use x as a measure of the energy of photons, since it is related to their frequency, so that the time independence of x allows to remove the momentum derivatives from the Liouville operator

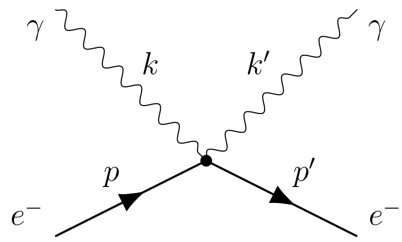
$$\hat{L}[f] = \frac{df(t,x)}{dt} = \frac{\partial f}{\partial t} + \frac{dx}{dt}\frac{\partial f}{\partial x} = \frac{\partial f}{\partial t} = C[f].$$

Note that in this way, the phase space distribution is stationary if and only if the collision term vanishes. Physically this means that only scatterings can change the number of photons or their energies.

There are three main types of these interactions.

1. **Compton scattering**: this is the main actor in the thermalization of the CMB. In this process photons are scattered by electrons

$$e^-(p) + \gamma(k) \rightleftharpoons e^-(p') + \gamma(k').$$



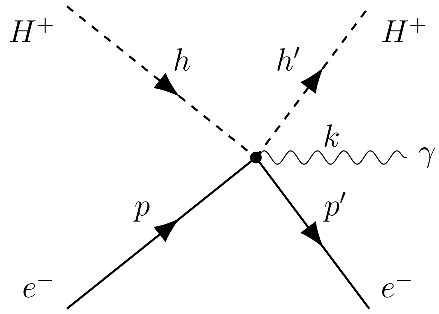
Each collision results in a transfer of energy between the photon and electron components of the plasma without changing the number of both. The collision term associated with this process is the **Kompaneets equation**, which reads

$$C[f]\Big|_{CS} = n_e\sigma_T\frac{k_BT_e}{m_e}x^{-2}\frac{\partial}{\partial x}\left[x^4\left(\frac{\partial f}{\partial x} + \frac{T_z}{T_e}f(1+f)\right)\right], \tag{7.2}$$

where n_e is the number of electrons per unit volume, σ_T the Thompson cross section and T_e is the temperature of the electrons.
The first term of the equation (7.2) account for the *Doppler effect* due to relative motions of the species in the plasma, while the second term describes the *recoil effect* and *stimulated recoil*.

2. **Bremsstrahlung**: this phenomenon arises when, during Coulomb scattering between electrons and ions (H^+ of charge Ze), an extra photon is produced

$$e^-(p) + H^+(h) \rightleftharpoons e^-(p') + H^+(h) + \gamma(k),$$



Note that this process, while transferring energy between different components of the plasma, generates new photons. The corresponding collision term reads

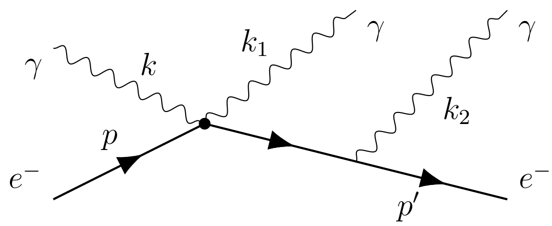
$$C[f]\Big|_{BR} = n_e\sigma_T \frac{K_{BR}\ e^{-x_e}}{x_e^3}[1 - f(e^{x_e} - 1)], \tag{7.3}$$
$$K_{BR} \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \frac{\alpha}{2\pi}\frac{\lambda_e^3}{\sqrt{6\pi}\theta_e^{7/2}}\sum_i Z_i^2 n_i \bar{g}_{ff}.$$

In the above we used the *dimensionless electron frequency* $x_e = \nu/(k_B T_e)$, the *dimensionless electron temperature* $\theta_e \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} k_B T_e/m_e$ and the *fine structure constant* $\alpha = e^2/(4\pi) \approx 137$. We are also accounting for the possibility of having different gasses of ions, each with a number of ions per unit volume corresponding to n_i. Lastly, we used the electron Compton wavelength $\lambda_e = 1/m_e \approx 2.43\times 10^{-10}$ cm and the *thermally averaged Gaunt factor*

$$\bar{g}_{ff} \approx \begin{cases} \frac{\sqrt{3}}{\pi}\log\frac{2.25}{x_e}, & \text{for } x_e \leq 0.37,\\ 1 & \text{otherwise.}\end{cases}$$

3. **Double Compton scattering**: this process consists of a regular Compton scattering followed by the emission of a second photon by the scattered electron

$$e^-(p) + \gamma(k) \rightleftharpoons e^-(p') + \gamma(k_1) + \gamma(k_2).$$



Assuming that $\gamma(k_2)$ is a soft photon, namely $k_2 \ll m_e$, the collision term for this interaction reads

$$C[f]\Big|_{\text{DCS}} = n_e\sigma_T \frac{K_{\text{DCS}}\ e^{-2x}}{x^3}[1 - f(e^{x_e} - 1)], \tag{7.4}$$
$$K_{\text{DCS}} \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} g_{\text{DCS}}\frac{4\alpha}{3\pi}\theta_\gamma^2 \int dx\ x^4 f(x)\Big(1 + f(x)\Big),$$
$$g_{\text{DCS}} \approx \frac{1 + 3/2x + 29/24x^2 + 11/16x^3 + 5/12x^4}{1 + 19.739\theta_\gamma - 5.5797\theta_e},$$

where we used the variables introduced for the previous interactions and the *dimensionless photon temperature* $\theta_\gamma = k_B T_z/m_e$.

All these collision terms must then be combined to obtain the full *Boltzmann equation* for the photons.

We already argued that the stationary phase space solution is reached when $C[f] = 0$. Since the main driving interaction is the Compton scattering, the most relevant collision term to study is equation (7.2). This identically vanishes when

$$0 = \frac{\partial f}{\partial x} + \frac{T_z}{T_e} f(1 + f),$$

which upon integration gives the equilibrium distribution

$$f(\nu) = \frac{1}{\exp[\nu/(k_B T_e) + C] - 1},$$

that we clearly recognize as the Bose-Einstein distribution of a gas in thermal equilibrium with the electrons in the plasma and with a chemical potential determined by the integration constant C. Note that the non-vanishing chemical potential at equilibrium is compatible with Compton scattering since such a interaction conserves the number of photons. However, Bremsstrahlung and double Compton scattering involve the creation of new photons, thus a zero chemical potential is required to achieve equilibrium, when considering all the interactions. In the end, we conclude that the above interactions will drive to phase space distribution to the well known **Planck distribution**

$$f(\nu) = \frac{1}{\exp[\nu/(k_B T_e)] - 1}.$$

7.1.1 Thermalization scales

In the previous section we described the interactions that lead the plasma of photons to an equilibrium distribution. However, as the universe evolve, some interaction could become inefficient, affecting the final phase space distribution of the photons. We will now try to understand the timescale needed to reach equilibrium by these processes: when a timescale becomes too large the transfer of energy is effectively zero and the corresponding intersection will have negligible effects.

In general, the Thompson timescale t_T describes the time between consecutive Compton scatterings, for the standard model of cosmology (with 24% of He) as in [6], it reads

$$t_T \overset{\text{def}}{=} (n_e \sigma_T)^{-1} \approx 2.7 \times 10^{20} X_e^{-1} (1+z)^{-3} s.$$

This timescale can be compared to the one associated with the expansion of the universe $t_H \overset{\text{def}}{=} H^{-1}$ to understand when the time between scatterings becomes large enough that no scattering will actually occur.
To thermalize the plasma, scatterings by themselves are not enough, indeed we also need to transfer, by these interactions, energy. The Kompaneets equation[1] (7.2) gives us the timescale for this transfer, as estimated in [6],

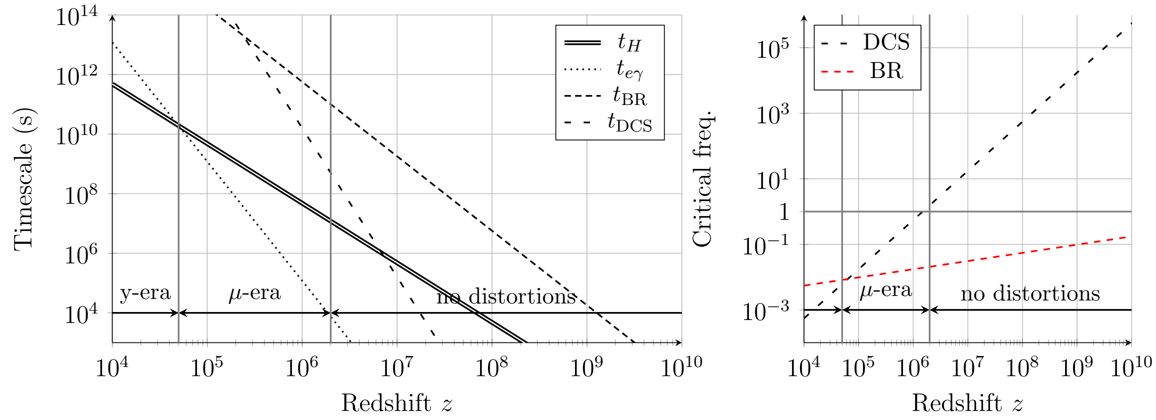
$$t_{e\gamma} = \frac{m_e t_T}{4 k_B T_e} \approx \frac{4.9 \times 10^5}{n_e \sigma_T} \left(\frac{1100}{1+z} \right) \approx 1.2 \times 10^{29} (1+z)^{-4} s,$$

where we considered that before recombination $T_e \approx T_\gamma \propto a^{-1}$, we inserted the temperature of the plasma and we considered $X_e \approx 1$ at high redshifts.
A comparison with the timescale of the expansion of the universe

$$t_H = H^{-1} \approx \begin{cases} 4.8 \times 10^{19} (1+z)^{-2} s & \text{radiation domination or } z > 3400, \\ 8.4 \times 10^{17} (1+z)^{-3/2} s & \text{matter domination,} \end{cases}$$

shows that the thermalization by Compton scattering becomes inefficient for $z_{\mu y} \approx 5 \times 10^4$. We should appreciate that this process becomes subdominant much before recombination.

[1] Intuitively, from the collision terms we can estimate each timescale by considering that $\frac{\partial \rho}{\partial t} = \frac{\rho}{t_{\text{scale}}} + \dots$ and that $\rho = \int d^3p\, E f(p,t)$. In this way, a rough estimate is obtained by reading the appropriate constants from the collision terms.



(a) Timescales of relevant processes. (b) Maximum relevant freq.

Figure 7.1: Comparison of CS, BR and DCS with the expansion of the universe. Left: Timescale comparison: when each $t > t_H$ the process becomes inefficient. Right: Maximum frequencies at which DCS and BR are efficient as function of z.

As we discussed, also Bremsstrahlung and double Compton scatterings affect the thermalization of the photon plasma, mainly by changing the number of photons. First, by estimating the two factors in equations (7.3) and (7.4) (using quantities typical off $z > 10^3$) as done by J. Chluba in [6]

$$K_{\rm BR} \approx 1.4 \times 10^{-6} \left(\frac{\bar{g}_{\rm ff}}{3.0}\right) \left(\frac{\Omega_b h^2}{0.022}\right) (1+z)^{-1/2} \quad \text{and } K_{\rm DCS} \approx 1.7 \times 10^{-20} (1+z)^2,$$

we discover that at higher redshift is the double Compton scattering to dominate over Bremsstrahlung. Then, to understand when these interactions are relevant we can compare their timescales to t_H: for low frequency photons we have

$$\begin{aligned} t_{\rm BR} &= \frac{t_T e^x x^3}{K_{\rm BR}(1-e^{x_e})} \approx 1.9 \times 10^{26} \left(\frac{\bar{g}_{ff}}{3}\right)^{-1} \left(\frac{\Omega_b h^2}{0.022}\right)^{-1} (1+z)^{-5/2} s, \\ t_{\rm DCS} &= \frac{t_T e^{2x} x^3}{K_{\rm DCS}(1-e^{x_e})} \approx 1.6 \times 10^{40} (1+z)^{-5}. \end{aligned}$$

Note that the timescales of these processes are also determined by the frequency x_e and x of the photons: in general these are efficient at high redshifts or for low frequency photons. The comparison of these timescales with t_H allows us to obtain the *critical frequency* for which these are efficient at a given redshift: in the limit $x \ll 1$ and assuming $T_z \approx T_e$ we find

$$\text{DCS efficient for } x > x_{\rm crit,DCS} \stackrel{\rm def}{=} 5.5 \times 10^{-10} (1+z)^{3/2}$$
$$\text{BR efficient for } x > x_{\rm crit,BR} \stackrel{\rm def}{=} 5.5 \times 10^{-4} (1+z)^{1/4}.$$

Overall, as shown in figure 7.1b for $z_{\rm th} \approx 2 \times 10^6$ both Bremsstrahlung and double Compton scattering become subdominant for high energy photons.

To proceed we should have in mind the following picture

1. For $z > z_{\rm th} \approx 2 \times 10^6$ all the discussed interactions are efficient and thus, as we argued in the previous section, the plasma can fully thermalize to a blackbody radiation.

2. For $z_{\rm th} \approx 2 \times 10^6 > z > z_{\mu y} \approx 5 \times 10^4$ Bremsstrahlung and double Compton scattering become subdominant, with respect to effect of the expansion of the universe on the photon plasma. Compton scattering is still efficient and thus photons and electrons can exchange energy, but the number of the former is almost fixed. This results in the possibility of generating *spectral distortions* since, as we showed previously, Compton scattering thermalizes with a non-zero chemical potential. This range of redshifts is called **μ-era**.

3. For $z > z_{\mu y} \approx 5 \times 10^4$ also Compton scattering becomes inefficient and therefore obtaining a perfect blackbody spectrum through thermalization becomes even harder. The impossibility of fully reach equilibrium, in this period called **y-era**, can give rise to another type of spectral distortions.

In the next sections we will focus on what kind of spectral distortions can be generated in these three phases and how they are generated.

7.2 Modeling spectral distortions

As we saw, at high redshifts the photon plasma will always thermalize to a blackbody radiation, which is in agreement with the observed CMB spectrum that turns out to be almost perfectly Planckian. Hence, spectral distortions will arise from deviations $\Delta f(x, t)$ from the *Planckian blackbody* phase space distribution $B(x) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} (e^x - 1)^{-1}$, as

$$f(t, x) = B(x) + \Delta f(t, x),$$

where $x = \nu/(k_B T_z)$ as before. Then, every contribution $\Delta f(x, t)$ will also distort the **intensity spectrum**

$$\mathcal{I}(t, x) = 2(k_B T_z)^3 x^3 f(t, x) = 2(k_B T_z)^3 [x^3 B(x) + x^3 \Delta f(t, x)],$$

which measures the energy of the radiation per unit frequency. Every distortion can then be further decomposed into a shape and an amplitude: the former one is determined by the physical process that generates the distortion while the latter measures how much the spectrum is distorted.

In the following sections we will study the distortions of the phase space distribution since the corresponding spectral distortions are obtained just by multiplying the former by $2(k_B T_z)^3 x^3$.

7.2.1 Shapes of spectral distortions

To determine the precise shape of the spectral distortions Δf we must consider some energy injection in the plasma (in section 7.2.3 we will discuss the nature of these injections) that perturbed equilibrium. We know that at different redshifts photons can thermalize in different ways since different interactions are efficient.

Temperature shift G

At $z > z_{\rm th} \approx 2 \times 10^6$ photons can fully thermalize again to a blackbody spectrum, this means that after some energy is injected, a blackbody spectrum will be recovered but the injected energy will increase its temperature. Suppose that initially the plasma is at some temperature T_z, then, after the injection, the new temperature $T_z + \Delta T$ is reached: in this way, the distortion can be characterized by Taylor expanding for small ΔT the new phase space distribution

$$B\left(\frac{\nu}{k_B(T_z+\Delta T)}\right) = B\left(\frac{x}{1+\Delta T/T_z}\right) \approx B(x) - x\frac{\partial B(x)}{\partial x}\frac{\Delta T}{T_z} \stackrel{\rm def}{=} B(x) + G(x)\frac{\Delta T}{T_z}.$$

From the above we recognize the shape of the distortion $G(x)$ and its amplitude $\Delta T/T_z$. The spectral distortion that we obtained is called **temperature shift**

$$G(x) \stackrel{\rm def}{=} -x\frac{\partial B(x)}{\partial x} = \frac{xe^x}{(e^x-1)^2}. \tag{7.5}$$

Note that, since T_z is defined with respect to a reference temperature observed today T_0, it is always possible to readjust T_0 such that it coincides with the perturbed temperature today, in this way the temperature shift becomes essentially unobservable.

Chemical potential μ distortion

For $z_{\rm th} > z > z_{\mu y}$ Bremsstrahlung and double Compton scattering are inefficient, thus the number of photons is almost fixed and only their energy can be redistributed through Compton scatterings. We already showed that from Kompaneets equation follows that a Bose-Einstein distribution with a non-zero chemical potential[2] is reached at equilibrium (section 7.1). This new phase space distribution, in the limit of $\mu/x \ll 1$, can be reduced to deviation from the blackbody behavior using a Taylor expansion

$$f(x) = B(x+\mu) = (e^{x+\mu}-1)^{-1} \approx B(x) + \frac{\partial B(x)}{\partial x}\mu = B(x) - \mu\frac{G(x)}{x},$$

which suggests that the shape of the so-called **μ-distortion** should be $-G/x$ while its amplitude should be μ. However, a simple calculation can show that such distortion would also result in a change of the number of photons from the initial one, since $\int d^3p B(x)$ is the initial number density of photons and

$$\int_0^\infty dx \frac{G(x)}{x}x^2 = \int_0^\infty dx \frac{x^2 e^x}{(e^x-1)^2} = 2\zeta(2) \neq 0,$$

while we know that in the μ-era no extra photon is produced or destroyed.
We can remove this undesired behavior considering also a temperature shift: this extra

[2] Note that in the following the chemical potential uses the convection $f(x,\mu) = (e^{x+\mu}-1)^{-1}$ which is different from the usual definition by a factor $-1/(k_B T)$.

distortion allows us to adjust the final number density of photons to be fixed.

$$M(x) \overset{\text{def}}{=} -G(x)\left(\frac{1}{x} - \alpha_\mu\right) \tag{7.6}$$

$$\begin{aligned}
0 &= \int_0^\infty dx\ x^2 M(x) = \int_0^\infty dx\ (-x^2 + \alpha_\mu x^3)\frac{e^x}{(e^x-1)^2} = \int_0^\infty dx\ (x^2 - \alpha_\mu x^3)\frac{d}{dx}\frac{1}{e^x - 1} \\
&= \int_0^\infty dx\ (-2x + \alpha_\mu 3x^2)\frac{1}{e^x-1} = \sum_{k=0}^\infty \int_0^\infty dx\ (-2x + \alpha_\mu 3x^2)e^{-x(k+1)} \\
&= \sum_{k=0}^\infty \left(- \frac{2}{(k+1)^2} + \alpha_\mu \frac{6}{(k+1)^3}\right) = -2\zeta(2) + 6\alpha_\mu \zeta(3) \\
&\implies \alpha_\mu = \frac{\zeta(2)}{3\zeta(3)} \approx 0.4561.
\end{aligned}$$

With this correction we finally have that a $\boldsymbol{\mu}$**-disortion** is given by

$$\Delta f(x) = \mu M(x) \overset{\text{def}}{=} -\mu G(x)\left(\frac{1}{x} - 0.4561\right).$$

Compton y distortion

Lastly, for $z < z_{\mu y}$ also energy transfer by Compton scattering becomes inefficient, this means that equilibrium is never fully reached after some energy injection, for example. In this case we can obtain a shape for the spectral distortions by exploiting the Kompaneets equation (7.2)

$$\frac{\partial f}{\partial t} = n_e \sigma_T \frac{k_B T_e}{m_e} x^{-2} \frac{\partial}{\partial x}\left[x^4 \left(\frac{\partial f}{\partial x} + \frac{T_z}{T_e} f(1+f)\right)\right].$$

Recall that in the above we exploited the time independence of x to rewrite $\hat{L}[f] = \frac{\partial f}{\partial t}$. Considering an initial blackbody distribution $B(x)$, this equation gives us an estimate for the change of phase space distribution over a small lapse of time Δt

$$\Delta f \approx n_e \sigma_T \frac{k_B T_e}{m_e} x^{-2} \frac{\partial}{\partial x}\left[x^4 \left(\frac{\partial B(x)}{\partial x} + \frac{T_z}{T_e} B(x)(1+B(x))\right)\right]\Delta t.$$

Some simple algebra can show that $-\frac{\partial B}{\partial x} = B(x)(1+B(x)) = \frac{G(x)}{x} = \frac{e^x}{(e^x-1)^2}$, so that the above reads in the end

$$\Delta f = yY(x) \overset{\text{def}}{=} -y\frac{1}{x^2}\frac{\partial}{\partial x}\left(x^3 G(x)\right) = y\ G(x)\left(x\frac{e^x+1}{e^x-1} - 4\right), \tag{7.7}$$

where Y is the shape of the so-called **y-distortion** and $y = n_e \sigma_T k_B \frac{T_e - T_z}{m_e}\Delta t$ is its amplitude. Observe that this distortion already conserves the number density of photons, since

$$\int_0^\infty dx\ x^2 Y(x) = \int_0^\infty dx\ x^2 G(x)\left(x\frac{e^x+1}{e^x-1} - 4\right) = 0,$$

and therefore no extra temperature shift is needed this time.

Note that an inefficient Compton scattering interaction is not the only way to generate a y-distortion. Indeed, by Taylor expanding at second order in $\Delta T/T_z$ a temperature shift we can produce a distortion with the same shape as a y-distortion.

$$\begin{aligned}
B\left(\frac{x}{1+\Delta T/T_z}\right) &\approx B(x) + \frac{\partial}{\partial\frac{\Delta T}{T_z}}\left(e^{\frac{x}{1+\Delta T/T_z}}-1\right)^{-1}\frac{\Delta T}{T_z} + \frac{1}{2}\frac{\partial^2}{\partial\frac{\Delta T}{T_z}^2}\left(e^{\frac{x}{1+\Delta T/T_z}}-1\right)^{-1}\left(\frac{\Delta T}{T_z}\right)^2 \\
&\approx B(x) + x\frac{e^x}{(e^x-1)^2}\frac{\Delta T}{T_z} - \frac{1}{2}\frac{e^x x}{(e^x-1)^2}\left[x - \frac{2e^x}{e^x-1}+2\right]\left(\frac{\Delta T}{T_z}\right)^2 \\
&= B(x) + G(x)\frac{\Delta T}{T_z} - \frac{1}{2}\frac{xe^x}{(e^x-1)^2}\left[\frac{x(e^x-1)-2xe^x}{e^x-1}-2\right]\left(\frac{\Delta T}{T_z}\right)^2 \\
&= B(x) + G(x)\frac{\Delta T}{T_z} + \frac{1}{2}[Y(x)+2G(x)]\left(\frac{\Delta T}{T_z}\right)^2. \qquad (7.8)
\end{aligned}$$

We can see that, overall, a temperature shift of amplitude $\Delta T/T_z + (\Delta T/T_z)^2$ and a y-distortion of amplitude $1/2 \times (\Delta T/T_z)^2$ are generated. This could seem like some trivia: instead one of the main mechanism that we will study in the next sections will rely on the necessity to expand a temperature shift up to the second order, generating this distortion.

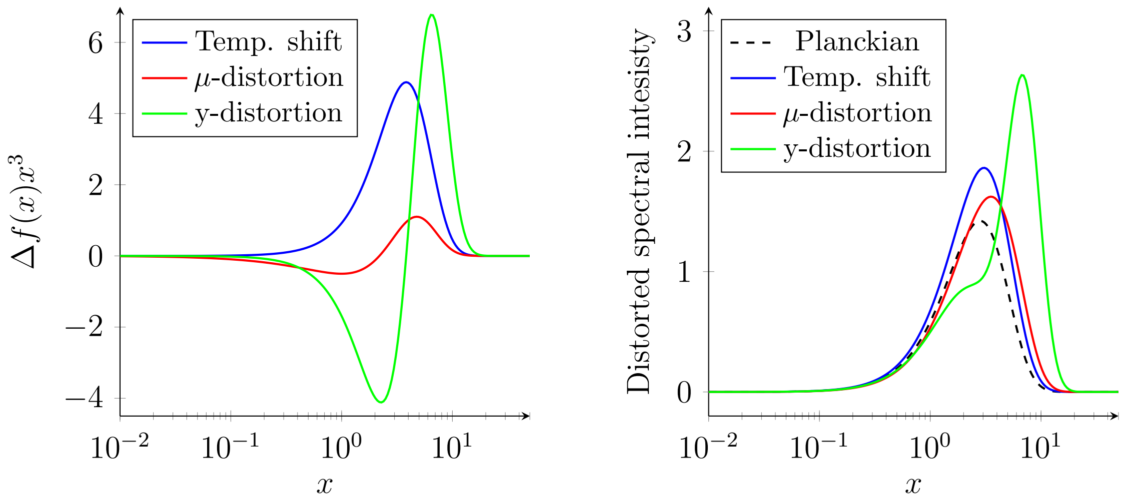


Figure 7.2: Shapes of the spectral distortions plotted by their spectral intensity $\mathcal{I} \propto f(x)x^3$. The plot on the left shows the three spectral distortions with unitary amplitudes. The plot on the right compares the Planckian spectrum and the three distorted ones (Planckian + distortion).

Residual distortion

A more refined discussion should also consider non-thermal processes, such as atomic transitions, that could generate spectral distortions. Since these processes are less relevant for our purpose, but they still contribute to the full energy balance of spectral distortions, we will define the **residual distortion** $R(x)$ that will account for those. In the end numerical methods will allow also to determine this distortion.

7.2.2 Amplitudes of spectral distortions

Now that we know which are the shapes of the of spectral distortions that we expect to observe in the *CMB*, we want to understand how their respective amplitudes can be obtained and what is their meaning.

In the previous section we derived the form of the different amplitudes as functions of temperatures or of the chemical potential. However, when studying the effects of energy injections in the plasma, it is useful to relate the amplitudes to the injected energy. This can easily be accomplished by considering that the energy density contribution of each spectral distortion must correspond to the injected energy that generated them in the first place. In this way, recalling that $\rho = \int d^3 p f(p,t) E = 4\pi (k_B T_z)^4 \int dx f(x) x^3$ since $E = p = \nu$ and $x = \nu/(k_B T_z)$, we can write

$$\left.\frac{\Delta\rho_\gamma}{\rho_\gamma}\right|_g = g\frac{\int dx G(x) x^3}{\int dx B(x) x^3} = 4g \quad \Rightarrow \quad \boxed{g = \frac{1}{4}\left.\frac{\Delta\rho_\gamma}{\rho_\gamma}\right|_g} \quad \text{Temp. Shift,} \tag{7.9}$$

$$\left.\frac{\Delta\rho_\gamma}{\rho_\gamma}\right|_\mu = \mu\frac{\int dx M(x) x^3}{\int dx B(x) x^3} = \frac{\mu}{1.401} \quad \Rightarrow \quad \boxed{\mu = 1.401\left.\frac{\Delta\rho_\gamma}{\rho_\gamma}\right|_\mu} \quad \mu\text{-distortion,} \tag{7.10}$$

$$\left.\frac{\Delta\rho_\gamma}{\rho_\gamma}\right|_y = y\frac{\int dx Y(x) x^3}{\int dx B(x) x^3} = 4y \quad \Rightarrow \quad \boxed{y = \frac{1}{4}\left.\frac{\Delta\rho_\gamma}{\rho_\gamma}\right|_y} \quad \text{y-distortion.} \tag{7.11}$$

Let's stop for a while to appreciate the physical meaning of each of these amplitudes. Indeed, in the above, we could even consider energy extraction from the plasma, therefore some physical considerations are needed. From our discussion on the shapes it is already clear that g is just a measure of the change of temperature of the blackbody radiation (equation (7.5)), in this way some energy extraction would correspond to a decrease of the temperature ($g < 0$). In the same way μ, from equation (7.6), is the chemical potential: physically its appearance means that the photon plasma hasn't the same number of particle that a blackbody radiation at the same temperature would have. In particular, since the chemical potential measures the energy necessary to change the number of particles:

- $\mu > 0$ distortions are generated by an energy injection, since we now have *more energetic but fewer photons* compared to a blackbody radiation at the same temperature;
- $\mu < 0$ is the result of an energy extraction that just lowered the energy of each photon leaving *more photons* than the corresponding blackbody radiation.

Lastly, considering that a y-distortion is produced when thermalization is not completely reached, we can distinguish between $y > 0$, when some energy is still being (inefficiently) transferred from electrons to photons, and $y < 0$, when the opposite occurs. In the former case, scatterings cause *Comptonization*, while in the latter they cause *Compton cooling*.

Usually only energy injections will occur in the early universe, as most of the processes tend to heat the plasma. For the purpose of this work energy extractions will be considered negligible and only positive amplitudes will be allowed.

7.2.3 Injected, deposited energy and heating rate

In the previous sections we argued that spectral distortions are generated by injection of energy in the photon plasma when some scattering process has become inefficient. However, this description is still not accurate enough: indeed, after the injection, the energy can be subject to other processes (e.g. adiabatic cooling due to the expansion of the universe or production of non-interacting particles) that can change the amount energy that generates spectral distortions.

To refine our description of the injected energy, we must differentiate between **injected energy** and **deposited energy**. The former is the energy that a certain process transfer to the plasma, while the latter is the energy that heats the plasma and contributes to the spectral distortions.
For each process that injects energy in the channel c (which describes the form of the heat), we define the **deposition function** $f_c(z)$. This function describes, at a given redshift, the fraction of injected energy that is deposited in the plasma. We can further decompose this function into an **injection efficiency function** $f_{\text{eff}}(z)$ and a **deposition fraction** $\chi_c(z)$. The former describes how much energy is deposited regardless the form and depends on the injecting process and on the universe conditions, while the latter accounts for the fraction deposited in each channel, with $\sum_c \chi_c = 1$. Overall we have

$$\left.\frac{dE}{dtdV}\right|_{\text{dep},c} = \left.\frac{dE}{dtdV}\right|_{\text{inj}} f_c(z) = \left.\frac{dE}{dtdV}\right|_{\text{inj}} f_{\text{eff}}(z)\chi_c(z) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \dot{\mathcal{Q}}(z)\chi_c(z). \tag{7.12}$$

To understand the meaning of this decomposition consider a process that injects energy in the form of different kinds of particles. If some species do not interact electromagnetically (for example neutrinos) they will not be able to exploit Comptonization to transfer energy to the photon plasma: the injection efficiency function will account for this.

Furthermore, the injection efficiency does not correspond to the energy transferred by electromagnetic interactions. Indeed, as it happens during the Dark ages, when the scattering rate is too low to thermalize the plasma immediately, some injected energy is lost due to the adiabatic cooling caused by the expansion of the universe. However, at pre-recombinatory redshifts, scatterings are frequent enough to thermalize the plasma almost immediately. In this case it is usually employed the so-called *on-the-spot* approximation, for which no energy is lost due to a non-istantaneous deposition. For our purposes, since we will always consider high redshifts (as explained in section 7.1.1), we will always use this approximation.

Lastly, we should account for the possibility of heating the photon component of the plasma by energy transfers among the different species or even by some energy redistribution among the photons themselves. This can happen, for example, during adiabatic cooling of different species: different cooling rates results in energy transfers between the species to reestablish equilibrium. In this case no energy is injected but in the end spectral distortions can still be generated. To describe this last effect we define the **non-injected heating rate** $\dot{Q}_{\text{non-inj}}$, so that the heating rate of the photon plasma reads

$$\dot{Q} = \left.\frac{dE}{dtdV}\right|_{\text{dep,c}} + \dot{Q}_{\text{non-inj}} = \dot{\mathcal{Q}}(z)\chi_c + \dot{Q}_{\text{non-inj}}. \tag{7.13}$$

Now that we have a full picture of how energy is injected in the plasma of photons, let's connect the heating rate to the spectral distortion amplitudes that we obtained in section 7.2.2. We can relate the heating rate to the energy density using the Liouville operator, starting from the definition of the energy density

$$\rho = \int d^3p\; f(p,t)E \quad \Rightarrow \quad \dot{Q} = \int d^3p\; \frac{df}{dt}E = \int_0^\infty 4\pi p^2 dp \left(\frac{\partial f}{\partial t} - Hp\frac{\partial f}{\partial p}\right)p$$
$$= \frac{\partial \rho}{\partial t} - 4\pi H\int_0^\infty dp\; \frac{\partial f}{\partial p}p^4 = \frac{\partial \rho}{\partial t} + 16\pi H\int_0^\infty dp\; f(p,t)p^3$$
$$= \frac{\partial \rho}{\partial t} + 4H\rho = \frac{1}{a^4}\frac{\partial(a^4\rho)}{\partial t},$$

in this way we obtained a differential equation for ρ, for which $\dot{Q}$ is a source term

$$\frac{\partial(a^4\rho)}{\partial t} = a^4\dot{Q}.$$

The general solution of this equation $\rho(t)$ is made of a homogeneous solution $\rho_z(t)$ and a particular solution $\Delta\rho(t)$. The homogeneous solution, obtained in absence of heating, is just the energy density of decoupled photons in the expanding universe $\rho_z \propto a^{-4}$. On the other hand, the particular solution $\Delta\rho(t)$ is the energy density deviation from the homogeneous one, that we related in section 7.2.2 to the spectral distortion amplitudes. Upon integration, we find that the particular solution reads

$$\Delta\rho(t) = \frac{1}{a^4}\int dt'\; a^4\dot{Q}(t') = \rho_z\int dt'\; \frac{\dot{Q}(t')}{\rho_z}.$$

We can now find an explicit expression for the left and side of equations (7.9), (7.10) and (7.11) by considering $\Delta\rho = \Delta\rho_\gamma$ and $\rho_\gamma = \rho_z$

$$\frac{\Delta\rho_\gamma}{\rho_\gamma} = \int dt\frac{\dot{Q}}{\rho_\gamma} = \int dz\frac{\dot{Q}}{(1+z)H\rho_\gamma} = \int dz\frac{dQ/dz}{\rho_\gamma}, \tag{7.14}$$

where we used that $dz = -H(1+z)dt$.

Note that an alternative notation for the heating rate is sometimes used in the literature. Indeed, equation (7.14) implies that $\dot{Q}/\rho_\gamma$ is (by the fundamental theorem of calculus) the time derivative of $\Delta\rho_\gamma/\rho_\gamma$. In this way, some papers refers to the heating rate as $\frac{d}{dt}\frac{\Delta\rho_\gamma}{\rho_\gamma}$. Hence, the two conventions are equivalent.

7.2.4 Branching rations and the Green's function approach

In the previous section we reduced the problem of determining the distortions in the CMB spectrum to the task of integrating the heating rate over time (equation (7.14)). In section 7.1.1 we showed that different types of distortions arise in different epochs of the universe since different interactions are efficient. Hence, when dealing with the heating rate we must take into account the thermal state of the universe. This can be accomplished by introducing the **branching rations** $\mathcal{J}_a(z)$: each of these functions describes the fraction of the deposited energy that contributes to a specific distortion a at redshift z. In this way, using the equation (7.14) with (7.9), (7.10) and (7.11) that we just derived in the previous section, we get that a given amplitude a can be evaluated as

$$a = C_a\frac{\Delta\rho_\gamma}{\rho_\gamma}\bigg|_a = C_a\int dz\frac{dQ/dz}{\rho_\gamma}\mathcal{J}_a(z), \quad \text{for } a = g, \mu, y, , \tag{7.15}$$

where C_a is the constant that relates the amplitude of each distortion to the fraction of deposited energy, and they are $C_g = 1/4$, $C_\mu = 1.401$ and $C_y = 1/4$.
This splits the general problem in two independent subproblems: determining the heating rate dQ/dz, which depends on the specific model that inject energy in the plasma, and solving for the branching ratios, which instead is independent of the injecting mechanism and is determined only by the thermal history of the universe.

Different approaches can be taken to obtain the branching ratios, we will now describe the main approximations and how to obtain the exact solution. From the discussion of section 7.1.1 one could get a brute approximation for the branching ratios as step functions that allows for a certain distortion to be produced only during its specific era.

$$\mathcal{J}_g(z) = \Theta_H(z - z_{\rm th}), \quad \mathcal{J}_\mu(z) = \Theta_H(z_{\rm th} - z)\Theta_H(z - z_{\mu y}), \quad \mathcal{J}_y(z) = \Theta_H(z_{\mu y} - z), \tag{7.16}$$

with $z_{\rm th} \approx 2 \times 10^6$ and $z_{\mu y} \approx 5 \times 10^4$. In this way we are assuming that the transition from one era to another is instantaneous, which clearly is not the case.

To improve this approximation we can consider that the chemical potential of the μ-distortions is frequency dependent (some ref). This happens because, as we discussed in section 7.1, for low energy photons these two processes can still be efficient even in the μ-era. Studying the full Boltzmann equation (as in ref) we can find an approximate solution of the frequency dependence of the chemical potential

$$\mu(x,t) \approx \mu_0 e^{-x_c(t)/x} e^{-(z/z_{\rm th})^{5/2}},$$

where x_c is the critical frequency and $z_{\rm th}$ is the redshift at which the Compton scattering becomes inefficient. This suggests that the μ branching ratio can be approximated by $f(z) \overset{\rm def}{=} e^{-(z/z_{\rm th})^{5/2}}$, giving in the end

$$\mathcal{J}_g(z) = 1 - f(z), \quad \mathcal{J}_\mu(z) = f(z), \quad \mathcal{J}_y(z) = f(z)\Theta_H(z_{\mu y} - z), \tag{7.17}$$

which describes a smooth g-μ transition and an instantaneous μ-y transition.
A further improvement is obtained by (ref 63 of lucca) considering a smooth μ-y transition and results in the following branching ratios:

$$\mathcal{J}_g(z) = 1 - f(z), \tag{7.18}$$

$$\mathcal{J}_\mu(z) = f(z)\left\{1 - \exp\left[-\left(\frac{1+z}{5.8 \times 10^4}\right)^{1.88}\right]\right\}, \tag{7.19}$$

$$\mathcal{J}_y(z) = \left[1 + \left(\frac{1+z}{6 \times 10^{2.58}}\right)\right]^{-1}. \tag{7.20}$$

Note that in this last approximation the sum of all the branching ratios is not equal to one, this is due to the presence of the residual distortions we mentioned at the end of section 7.2.1.

Finally, we can derive an exact solution for the branching ratios. This is done by exploiting *Green's functions* methods to solve equation (7.14): we will now explain the main idea behind this method, but a more detailed explanation can be found in [15]. To begin we consider the distorted spectral intensity associated with the photon plasma

$$\mathcal{I}(x,z) \overset{\rm def}{=} 2p^3 f(p,t) = (k_B T_z)^3 x^3 \Big[B(x) + G(x) + M(x) + Y(x)\Big],$$

in which we used $x \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} p/(k_B T_z) = \nu/(k_B T_z)$. Note that the intensity is the integrand function that gives the energy density of the plasma (upon integration over p or equivalently ν), and the factor 2 accounts for the two polarization of the photons. Now, the last three terms of the above are the spectral distortions, we thus define $\Delta\mathcal{I}$ as their sum. We want to find the Green's function $G_{\text{th}}(x, z, z')$ that gives $\Delta\mathcal{I}(x, z)$ for an arbitrary heating rate as

$$\Delta\mathcal{I}(x, z) = \int dz' G_{\text{th}}(x, z, z') \frac{dQ(z')/dz'}{\rho_\gamma(z')}.$$

This has been done by J. Chluba [4] by studying the full Boltzmann equation for photons and baryons. Then, a direct comparison with equation (7.15) relates the full Green's function to each branching rations

$$G_{\text{th}}(x, z = 0, z') = \frac{1}{4} x^3 G(x) \mathcal{J}_g(z') + 1.401 x^3 M(x) \mathcal{J}_\mu(z') + \frac{1}{4} x^3 Y(x) \mathcal{J}_y(z'),$$

in this way one can, from the full Green's function, obtain the branching ratios. Note that at this point a residual contribution can be added to obtain a measure of the residual distortion we introduced at the end of section 7.2.1.

7.3 Dissipation of primordial perutbations

Primordial perturbations, when reentering the Hubble horizon after inflation, excite standing waves in the plasma that, depending on the phase of the wave, lead to different patches of photons to be hotter or colder than the average. Later on, these photons can diffuse in the baryon-photon plasma and mix together. In this way diffusion dissipates the standing waves and generates distortions in the *CMB spectrum*. For scalar perturbations, this well known effect is called *Silk damping*.

Initially, the **mixing of blackbodies** at different temperatures (by diffusion) produces *y-distortions* in the overall spectrum of the CMB. Then, **comptonization** brings the equilibrium phase space distribution to a Bose-Einstein one (section 7.1), turning the initial distortions in *μ-distortions*. In the following sections we will describe these two processes in detail.

7.3.1 Mixing of blackbodies

We already discovered that at high redshifts all the interactions in the primordial plasma bring the photons to a state of thermal equilibrium described by the Planck distribution

$$B(\nu, T) = \frac{1}{\exp[\nu/(k_B T_e)] - 1} = \left(e^x - 1\right)^{-1}, \qquad \text{with } x = \frac{\nu}{k_B T_e}.$$

From this distribution we can evaluate the number density and the energy density of the photons in the radiation

$$n \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \frac{g}{(2\pi)^3} \int d^3p \; f(p, T) \qquad \Longrightarrow \qquad n = b_R T^3,$$

$$\rho \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \frac{g}{(2\pi)^3} \int d^3p \; f(p, T) p \qquad \Longrightarrow \qquad \rho = a_R T^4,$$

where $a_R \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \pi^2 k_B^4/15$ and $b_R \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} 2k_B^3\zeta(3)/\pi^2$, with the number of internal degrees of freedom of photons $g = 2$.
From the first principle of thermodynamics and choosing as the intensive thermodynamic variable T, we can then obtain the entropy density ($s = S/V$) by

$$\begin{aligned}
TdS &= TVds + Ts\ dV = TV\frac{\partial s}{\partial T}\bigg|_V dT + Ts\ dV \\
&= d(\rho V) + PdV = Vd\rho + \rho\ dV + PdV = V\frac{\partial\rho}{\partial T}\bigg|_V dT + \rho\ dV + \frac{1}{3}\rho\ dV \\
\Rightarrow &\quad \left(TV\frac{\partial s}{\partial T}\bigg|_V - V\frac{\partial\rho}{\partial T}\bigg|_V\right)dT = \left(\frac{4}{3}\rho + Ts\right)dV \quad \Rightarrow \quad \boxed{s = \frac{4}{3}\frac{\rho}{T} = \frac{4}{3}a_R T^3},
\end{aligned}$$

where we used the equation of state for radiation $P = \frac{1}{3}\rho$ and the fact that the change of temperature and volume must be independent.

In general, Zeldovich [18] showed that the mixing of blackbody spectra results in the appearance of a y-distortion. This can easily be understood by Taylor expanding a Planck distribution whose temperature depends on the position in the plasma (so that this describes a different blackbody spectrum at each point in space) and then taking the spatial average. This can also be seen as an ensemble of blackbodies at different temperatures, then the average becomes an ensemble average. Considering a temperature $\bar{T}+\Delta T(x)$, with $\Delta T \ll \bar{T}$ the expansion of $B[x/(1+\Delta T/\bar{T})]$ would be a temperature shift 7.5: however, this kind of distortion, being linear in $\Delta T/\bar{T}$, will give no distortion terms after the spatial average (hotter and colder spots, on average, give the mean temperature $\bar{T}$). A temperature shift expanded at the second order (equation 7.8) instead gives rise to non-vanishing terms in the average

$$\begin{aligned}
\left\langle B\left(\frac{x}{1+(\Delta T/\bar{T})^2}\right)\right\rangle &\approx \left\langle B(x) + G(x)\frac{\Delta T}{\bar{T}} + \frac{1}{2}[Y(x)+2G(x)]\left(\frac{\Delta T}{\bar{T}}\right)\right\rangle \\
&= B(x) + G(x)\left\langle\frac{\Delta T}{\bar{T}}\right\rangle + \frac{1}{2}[Y(x)+2G(x)]\left\langle\left(\frac{\Delta T}{\bar{T}}\right)^2\right\rangle \\
&\Big\downarrow \left\langle\frac{\Delta T}{\bar{T}}\right\rangle = 0,\ B(x) + G(x)\left\langle\left(\frac{\Delta T}{\bar{T}}\right)^2\right\rangle \approx B\left(\frac{x}{1+\langle(\Delta T/\bar{T})^2\rangle}\right), \\
&\approx B\left(\frac{x}{1+\langle(\Delta T/\bar{T})^2\rangle}\right) + \frac{1}{2}Y(x)\left\langle\left(\frac{\Delta T}{\bar{T}}\right)^2\right\rangle,
\end{aligned} \tag{7.21}$$

where we used that the mean of the temperature perturbations is zero, and we recognized a first order temperature shift distortion in the term proportional to $G(x)$.
The above calculation thus shows that the mixing of blackbodies, not only results in a y-distortion, but also in a small increase in temperature to $T_{\text{new}} = \bar{T}(1+\langle(\Delta T/\bar{T})^2\rangle)$. We shall also recall that a y-distortion maintains unchanged the number of photons in the radiation: indeed the mixing consists just in a spatial redistribution of "hotter" and "colder" photons. Hence, even though the temperature increases and thus one should expect a change in the number of photons, this happens only with respect to the number density of each blackbody, while the total number of photons remains unchanged.

Another way to see this phenomenon is by considering directly the mixing of two blackbodies at temperature $T_1 = \bar{T}+\Delta T$ and $T_2 = \bar{T}-\Delta T$ (now ΔT is not a function of space anymore). Before the two blackbodies have mixed some photons will obey the first blackbody distribution while the others the second one[3]: hence the initial energy density, number density and entropy density are just the average of the two blackbodies:

$$\rho_{\text{initial}} = \frac{1}{2}a_R(T_1^4 + T_2^4) \approx a_R\bar{T}^4\left[1 + 6\left(\frac{\Delta T}{\bar{T}}\right)^2\right] > a_R\bar{T}^4, \tag{7.22}$$

$$n_{\text{initial}} = \frac{1}{2}b_R(T_1^3 + T_2^3) \approx b_R\bar{T}^3\left[1 + 3\left(\frac{\Delta T}{\bar{T}}\right)^2\right] > b_R\bar{T}^3, \tag{7.23}$$

$$s_{\text{initial}} = \frac{1}{2}\frac{4}{3}a_R(T_1^3 + T_2^3) \approx \frac{4}{3}a_R\left[1 + 3\left(\frac{\Delta T}{\bar{T}}\right)^2\right] > \frac{4}{3}a_R\bar{T}^3, \tag{7.24}$$

where for each quantity we Taylor expanded for $\Delta T/\bar{T} \ll 1$ at the first order.
Note that all the three averages are larger than the densities that would have a single blackbody at the average temperature $\bar{T}$. These extra contributions, as we will see, are responsible for the creation of the distortions.
After the mixing, we will have a single blackbody spectrum (plus distortions) with a new temperature T_{final}; since the number of photons is unchanged (we only mix them) we can obtain this new temperature from the initial number density using $n = b_R T^4$ for blackbodies

$$T_{\text{final}} = \left(\frac{n_{\text{initial}}}{b_R}\right)^{1/3} \approx \bar{T}\left[1 + \left(\frac{\Delta T}{\bar{T}}\right)^2\right],$$

similarly to what we found with the previous approach. The extra photons thus cause only an increase in the temperature because the y-distortion conserves the number of photons ($\int dx\ x^2 Y(x) = 0$), hence only the blackbody part of the spectrum and the temperature shift, from the (7.21), contribute to the number density.
Now, the final temperature allows us to evaluate the final energy density

$$\rho_{\text{final}} = a_R T_{\text{final}}^4 \approx a_R\bar{T}^4\left[1 + 4\left(\frac{\Delta T}{\bar{T}}\right)^2\right] < \rho_{\text{initial}},$$

which we find to be smaller that the initial one. This is because some energy is now stored in the form of the y-distortion (that we haven't considered yet since we are only using the observable of a blackbody). Indeed, by comparing $\rho - a_R\bar{T}^4$, which (form equation 7.21) is the energy density associated to all the distortions (temperature shift + y-distortion), we discover that only 2/3 of this energy is then transferred in the new blackbody radiation at T_{final} (in the form of the temperature shift)

$$\rho_{\text{final}} - a_R\bar{T}^4 = 4\left(\frac{\Delta T}{\bar{T}}\right)^2 a_R\bar{T}^4 = \frac{2}{3}\left(\rho_{\text{initial}} - a_R\bar{T}^4\right).$$

The remaining 1/3 of the energy corresponds to the contribution of the y-distortion

$$\frac{1}{3}\left(\rho_{\text{initial}} - a_R\bar{T}^4\right) = 2\left(\frac{\Delta T}{\bar{T}}\right)^2 a_R\bar{T}^4 \propto \frac{1}{2}\left(\frac{\Delta T}{\bar{T}}\right)^2 \int dx\ x^3 Y(x).$$

Lastly, we can compute the final entropy density

$$s_{\text{final}} = \frac{4}{3}a_R T_{\text{final}}^3 \approx \frac{4}{3}a_R\bar{T}^4\left[1 + 3\left(\frac{\Delta T}{\bar{T}}\right)^2\right] = s_{\text{initial}}.$$

[3]Approximately half are at T_1 and the other half at T_2 since the two temperatures are really close.

However, this holds only for the entropy associated to the new shifted blackbody spectrum and also the y-distortion should contribute to entropy. We can compute this contribution from the fraction of energy stored in the y-distortion $\Delta\rho = 1/3(\rho_{\text{initial}} - a_R\bar{T}^4)$

$$\Delta s = \frac{\Delta\rho}{T} \approx 2a_R\bar{T}^3\left(\frac{\Delta T}{\bar{T}}\right)^2.$$

This extra contribution is expected since, when mixing the two blackbodies, the entropy should increase as when we mix two fluids (the disorder increases), hence the initial entropy cannot be the same as the final.

To sum up what we discovered, mixing of blackbodies leads to a new spectrum that can be decomposed in two parts: a blackbody at a higher temperature $T_{\text{new}} = \bar{T}\big(1 + \langle(\Delta T/\bar{T})^2\rangle\big)$ and a y-distortion. While the number of photons is conserved (since we are only mixing them) and fully accounted by the blackbody part, the energy and entropy are redistributed between the temperature shift of the blackbody and the y-distortion. Exactly, 2/3 of the energy associated to the distortions is directly transferred to the new blackbody (as a temperature increase), while the remaining 1/3 is stored in the y-distortion. The entropy associated to the blackbody is instead conserved, while a new contribution appears due to the y-distortion. We shall indicate that, although part of our calculations used only the mixing of two blackbodies, considering an ensemble of n blackbodies the result can be generalized without spoiling our solution. Indeed, it is sufficient to replace $(\Delta T/\bar{T})^2$ by $\langle(\Delta T/\bar{T})^2\rangle$ to account for the whole ensemble, as explained in [14].

7.3.2 Comptonization of mixed blackbodies

The previously described mixing generates a y-distortion without considering the interactions in the plasma, this means that the y-distortion is produced at redshifts $z < z_{\mu y} \approx 5 \times 10^4$ (see section 7.1). In the presence of Compton scatterings the resulting transfer of energy thermalizes the radiation to a Bose-Einstein distribution (or a Planckian if also Bremsstrahlung and double Compton scattering are efficient). When the Bose-Einstein distribution is produced, the y-distortion is converted into a μ-distorion.

To obtain the amplitude of the new distortion generated we can proceed to consider the mixing of the two, previously introduced, blackbodies at T_1 and T_2. We assume that after comptonization the temperature of the radiation changes from $T_{\text{new}} = \bar{T}\big[1 + (\Delta T/\bar{T})^2\big]$ to $T_{\text{BE}} = T_{\text{new}}(1 + t_{\text{BE}}) \approx \bar{T}\big[+ t_{\text{BE}} + (\Delta T/\bar{T})^2\big]$, where $t_{\text{BE}} \ll 1$ measures the change in temperature. Now, the energy and number densities are fully described by the Bose-Einstein distribution, in appendix B.1.1 approximated formulae for these are evaluated in the limit of small chemical potential. Since comptonization conserves the number of photons (in section 7.1 we discussed that no extra photons are created by Compton scattering) we can compare the initial number density to the final one. Then, since the blackbodies are at very close temperatures, we can assume that they are almost in thermal equilibrium with the other components of the plasma. Hence, the exchange of energy between different species of the plasma is negligible and we can consider the energy density of the photons unchanged. Using equation (B.1) and (B.2) we can equate the initial and final number and energy densities:

$$
\begin{aligned}
n_{\text{final}} &\approx b_R T_{\text{BE}}^3 \left(1 - \mu \frac{\zeta(2)}{\zeta(3)}\right) \approx b_R \bar{T}^3 \left(1 + 3t_{\text{BE}} + 3\left(\frac{\Delta T}{\bar{T}}\right)^2 - \mu \frac{\zeta(2)}{\zeta(3)}\right) \\
&= n_{\text{initial}} = b_R \bar{T}^3 \left[1 + 3\left(\frac{\Delta T}{\bar{T}}\right)^2\right], \\
\rho_{\text{final}} &\approx b_R T_{\text{BE}}^4 \left(1 - \mu \frac{\zeta(3)}{\zeta(4)}\right) \approx b_R \bar{T}^3 \left(1 + 4t_{\text{BE}} + 4\left(\frac{\Delta T}{\bar{T}}\right)^2 - \mu \frac{\zeta(3)}{\zeta(4)}\right) \\
&= \rho_{\text{initial}} = b_R \bar{T}^3 \left[1 + 6\left(\frac{\Delta T}{\bar{T}}\right)^2\right].
\end{aligned}
$$

From the first equation we immediately obtain that $t_{\text{BE}} = \mu \frac{\zeta(2)}{3\zeta(3)}$, inserting this relation in the second equation we obtain

$$
\mu = 2\left(\frac{4\zeta(2)}{3\zeta(3)} - \frac{\zeta(3)}{\zeta(4)}\right)^{-1} \left(\frac{\Delta T}{\bar{T}}\right)^2 \approx 2.802 \left(\frac{\Delta T}{\bar{T}}\right)^2, \tag{7.25}
$$

$$
t_{\text{BE}} = \frac{2\zeta(2)}{3\zeta(3)} \left(\frac{4\zeta(2)}{3\zeta(3)} - \frac{\zeta(3)}{\zeta(4)}\right)^{-1} \left(\frac{\Delta T}{\bar{T}}\right)^2 \approx 1.278 \left(\frac{\Delta T}{\bar{T}}\right)^2. \tag{7.26}
$$

Note that the same chemical potential can be obtained by considering a that all the energy stored in the y-distortion gets transferred to the μ-distortion, using equation 7.10:

$$
\mu = 1.401 \frac{\Delta\rho}{\rho} = 1.401 \frac{\frac{1}{3}(\rho_{\text{initial}} - a_R \bar{T}^4)}{a_R \bar{T}^4} = 1.401 \times \frac{6}{3} \left(\frac{\Delta T}{\bar{T}}\right)^2 = 2.802 \left(\frac{\Delta T}{\bar{T}}\right)^2.
$$

To conclude let us write the total spectral distortion that we obtain after comptonization:

$$
f(x) = B(x) + G(x)\left[\left(\frac{\Delta T}{\bar{T}}\right)^2 + t_{\text{BE}}\right] - \mu \frac{G(x)}{x},
$$

where, after the Planckian spectrum B, we have the total temperature shift (both from the mixing and the comptonization) and the μ-distortion. Note that the latter appears as $-G(x)/x$ and not at as $M(x)$: this is because we assumed that the temperature changes during comptonization and then we imposed that the number of photons was conserved. Hence, the temperature shift t_{BE} already accounts also for the shift contained in M.

Again, this result can be generalized to the case of mixing n blackbodies by replacing the factors $(\Delta T/\bar{T})^2$ with the ensemble average $\langle(\Delta T/\bar{T})^2\rangle$.

7.3.3 Mixing of polarized blackbodies

When dealing with the *CMB*, the mixing of blackbodies must take into account also that the radiation is polarized. To connect to section 6.2.1 we shall change our notation to be consistent to the usual definition of *CMB anisotropies* $\Theta(x,t) \overset{\text{def}}{=} \Delta T/\bar{T}$.

We start by describing linearly polarized light, then the more general case will be deduced exploiting the following calculations. We start by introducing a *phase space matrix*

$$
\mathcal{F}_{\text{unpol}} \overset{\text{def}}{=} \begin{pmatrix} B(x) & 0 \\ 0 & B(x) \end{pmatrix} \xrightarrow{\text{polarization}} \mathcal{F} \overset{\text{def}}{=} \begin{pmatrix} B(x/[1+\Theta_\parallel]) & 0 \\ 0 & B(x/[1+\Theta_\perp]) \end{pmatrix}, \tag{7.27}
$$

where $\Theta_\perp$ and $\Theta_\parallel$ are the temperature fluctuations associated to photons that are polarized either in the perpendicular direction or in the orthogonal one and $B(x)$ is the Planckian spectrum. The total phase space distribution is then recovered by taking the trace of the above matrices $f = \mathrm{Tr}(\mathcal{F})/2$, which corresponds to the average of the two polarization. It is useful to rewrite the above in terms of the *Pauli matrices* σ_i

$$\mathcal{F} = \frac{f_\parallel + f_\perp}{2}\begin{pmatrix}1 & 0\\ 0 & 1\end{pmatrix} + \frac{f_\parallel - f_\perp}{2}\begin{pmatrix}1 & 0\\ 0 & -1\end{pmatrix} = f_I\hat{1} + f_Q\sigma_3,$$

where $f_\parallel \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} B(x/[1+\Theta_\parallel])$ and $f_\perp \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} B(x/[1+\Theta_\perp])$, while f_I is the distribution associated to the Stokes parameter I, and it corresponds to f, while f_Q is associated to Q.

With this framework we can proceed to expand (as in equation 7.21) the perturbation at the second order to obtain the distortions:

$$\begin{aligned}
f_I &= \frac{f_\parallel + f_\perp}{2} \approx B(x) + G(x)\frac{\Theta_\parallel + \Theta_\perp + \Theta_\parallel^2 + \Theta_\perp^2}{2} + Y(x)\frac{\Theta_\parallel^2 + \Theta_\perp^2}{4},\\
f_Q &= \frac{f_\parallel - f_\perp}{2} \approx G(x)\frac{\Theta_\parallel - \Theta_\perp + \Theta_\parallel^2 - \Theta_\perp^2}{2} + Y(x)\frac{\Theta_\parallel^2 - \Theta_\perp^2}{4}.
\end{aligned}$$

Now, identifying the right anisotropies associated to each Stokes parameter, $\Theta_I = (\Theta_\parallel + \Theta_\perp)/2$ and $\Theta_Q = (\Theta_\parallel - \Theta_\perp)/2$, we find

$$\begin{aligned}
f_I &\approx B(x) + G(x)\Big(\Theta_I + \Theta_I^2 + \Theta_Q^2\Big) + Y(x)\frac{\Theta_I^2 + \Theta_Q^2}{2},\\
f_Q &\approx G(x)\Big(\Theta_Q + 2\Theta_I\Theta_Q\Big) + Y(x)\Theta_I\Theta_Q.
\end{aligned}$$

This shows that also the phase space associated to the Q parameter gets a temperature shift and a y-distortion.

To generalize this result to a generic distortion we can simply consider the phase space distribution f_U, by a change of basis this can be rotated into f_Q (as a rotation changes $U \to Q$). This means that the above calculations holds also for f_U (since the distribution is itself a scalar) and just by rotating everything back we get the final result

$$\mathcal{F} = f_I\hat{1} + f_Q\sigma_3 + f_u\sigma_1 \tag{7.28a}$$

$$f_I \approx B(x) + G(x)\Big(\Theta_I + \Theta_I^2 + \Theta_Q^2 + \Theta_U^2\Big) + Y(x)\frac{\Theta_I^2 + \Theta_Q^2 + \Theta_U^2}{2}, \tag{7.28b}$$

$$f_Q \approx G(x)\Big(\Theta_Q + 2\Theta_I\Theta_Q\Big) + Y(x)\Theta_I\Theta_Q, \tag{7.28c}$$

$$f_U \approx G(x)\Big(\Theta_U + 2\Theta_I\Theta_U\Big) + Y(x)\Theta_I\Theta_U, \tag{7.28d}$$

where we obtained $f_u\sigma_1$ by the change of basis. Overall, the y-distortion can be read by averaging the phase space distributions

$$f \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \frac{1}{2}\mathrm{Tr}(\mathcal{F}) = B(x) + G(x)\Big(\Theta_I + \Theta_I^2 + \Theta_Q^2 + \Theta_U^2\Big) + Y(x)\frac{\Theta_I^2 + \Theta_Q^2 + \Theta_u^2}{2}$$

and then by taking the spatial average over the temperature anisotropies (recall $\langle\Theta\rangle = 0$ as in section 7.3.1)

$$\langle f\rangle = B(x) + G(x)\Big\langle \Theta_I^2 + \Theta_Q^2 + \Theta_U^2 \Big\rangle + Y(x)\Big\langle \frac{\Theta_I^2 + \Theta_Q^2 + \Theta_U^2}{2} \Big\rangle$$

$$\implies \quad \boxed{y = \frac{1}{2}\Big\langle \Theta_I^2 + \Theta_Q^2 + \Theta_U^2 \Big\rangle}. \tag{7.29}$$

From the above we can integrate the spectral distortion to obtain the energy stored in it: the integral is the same as when we consider unpolarised light from just two blackbodies ($\int dx\ x^3 Y(x)$) but now it is multiplied by $\langle \Theta_I^2 + \Theta_Q^2 + \Theta_U^2 \rangle$ instead of $(\Delta T/\bar{T})^2$. Thus, the final result is that the excess energy of an ensemble of blackbodies at different temperatures reads

$$\frac{\Delta\rho}{\rho}\bigg|_{\text{excess}} = 6\Big\langle \Theta_I^2 + \Theta_Q^2 + \Theta_U^2 \Big\rangle, \tag{7.30}$$

1/3 of this energy generates the y-distortion and the remaining 2/3 raise the temperature of the radiation.

If Comptonization is still efficient, the y-distortion turns in a μ-distortion. The amplitude of this final distortion can be obtained, as we observed in the previous section, from (7.10) considering that all the energy of the y-distortion is transferred to the μ one

$$\mu = 1.401 \times \frac{1}{3}\frac{\Delta\rho}{\rho}\bigg|_{\text{excess}} = 2.802\Big\langle \Theta_I^2 + \Theta_Q^2 + \Theta_U^2 \Big\rangle. \tag{7.31}$$

7.3.4 Dissipation of scalar perturbations

We already anticipated that the process of mixing of blackbodies occurs at high redshifts when primordial perturbations reenter the Hubble horizon and start to interact with the plasma. In section 6.2 we studied how the scalar perturbations generate temperature anisotropies as the result of this interaction. Temperature anisotropies, that intuitively we can think as hotter or colder patches of photon plasma, as the universe cools down (the mean free path of photons decreases a little) then can mix. This erases the perturbations at the smallest scales and the dissipated energy produces the spectral distortions. If this process occurs during the μ-era, the resulting distortion is immediately Comptonized and we obtain a μ distortion, otherwise we are left with the y-distortion.

Equations (7.29) and (7.31) relate the anisotropies to the amplitudes of the distortions, however we are interested in obtaining the distortions that we could observe today from the thermal history of the universe. For this we will need the expression for the heating rate, which describes how much energy is deposited in the distortions at a specific time: comparing the above equations with equation (7.14) we find (- sign ???)

$$\frac{\dot{Q}}{\rho_\gamma} = \frac{d}{dt}\frac{\Delta\rho_\gamma}{\rho_\gamma}\bigg|_{\text{dist}} = \frac{1}{3}\times\frac{d}{dt}\frac{\Delta\rho_\gamma}{\rho_\gamma}\bigg|_{\text{excess}} = 2\Big\langle \Theta_I^2 + \Theta_Q^2 + \Theta_U^2 \Big\rangle,$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad \frac{\dot{Q}}{\rho_\gamma}\bigg|_I = \frac{d}{dt}\frac{\Delta\rho_\gamma}{\rho_\gamma}\bigg|_{\text{I}} = 4\langle \Theta_I \dot{\Theta}_I\rangle, \tag{7.32}$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad \frac{\dot{Q}}{\rho_\gamma}\bigg|_P = \frac{d}{dt}\frac{\Delta\rho_\gamma}{\rho_\gamma}\bigg|_{\text{P}} = 4\langle \Theta_Q \dot{\Theta}_Q + \Theta_U \dot{\Theta}_U\rangle, \tag{7.33}$$

where in the last two line we separated the heating rates generated respectively by the temperature anisotropies and the polarization anisotropies.

In this first section, we will obtain the heating rate of the dissipation of scalar perturbations, in the next section similar calculations will lead to the heating rate of the tensor modes. The guiding idea in the following calculations is that the Boltzmann equation allows us to relate the time derivative of the anisotropies to the sources of these anisotropies (metric perturbations or the anisotropies themselves). As proved by J. Chluba in [5] by studying the second order perturbed Boltzmann equation, once anisotropies are sourced the metric perturbations will not contribute to the formation of spectral distortions: intuitively this is due fact that it is the mixing of blackbodies, caused by free streaming and scattering, that sources the distortions (Non so se questa interpretazione sia giusta). For these reasons we may neglect any metric perturbation in the equations (6.23) (that describe the evolution of the anisotropies).
To use equations (6.23) we have first to move in Fourier space and project the anisotropies onto the Legendre polynomials (equation (6.9)), in this way in equation (7.32) above we have

$$\Theta_I\dot{\Theta}_I = \int \frac{d^3k}{(2\pi)^3}\frac{d^3k'}{(2\pi)^3}e^{i(\mathbf{k}+\mathbf{k}')\cdot\mathbf{x}}\sum_{\ell=0}^{\infty}\sum_{\ell'=0}^{\infty}\frac{(2\ell+1)(2\ell'+1)}{i^{\ell+\ell'}}\tilde{\Theta}_\ell(\mathbf{k})\dot{\tilde{\Theta}}_{\ell'}(\mathbf{k}')P_\ell(\mu)P_{\ell'}(\mu'),$$

where $\mu \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \hat{\mathbf{k}}\cdot\hat{\mathbf{n}}$ and $P_\ell(\mu)$ are the Legendre polynomials (as in section 6.1.1).
At this point, to compute the spatial average we first must remove the $\hat{\mathbf{n}}$ dependence (direction of motion of photons) of Θ by averaging over the solid angle: the well known relation for the Legendre polynomials

$$\int \frac{d\Omega_{\hat{\mathbf{n}}}}{4\pi}P_\ell(\hat{\mathbf{k}}\cdot\hat{\mathbf{n}})P_{\ell'}(\hat{\mathbf{k}}'\cdot\hat{\mathbf{n}}) = \frac{P_\ell(\hat{\mathbf{k}}\cdot\hat{\mathbf{k}}')}{2\ell+1}\delta_{\ell\ell'}$$

allows for some simplification leading to

$$\int \frac{d\Omega_{\hat{\mathbf{n}}}}{4\pi}\Theta_I\dot{\Theta}_I = \int \frac{d^3k}{(2\pi)^3}\frac{d^3k'}{(2\pi)^3}e^{i(\hat{\mathbf{k}}+\hat{\mathbf{k}}')\cdot\mathbf{x}}\sum_{\ell=0}^{\infty}\frac{2\ell+1}{(-1)^\ell}\tilde{\Theta}_\ell(\mathbf{k})\dot{\tilde{\Theta}}_\ell(\mathbf{k}')P_\ell(\hat{\mathbf{k}}\cdot\hat{\mathbf{k}}').$$

We can now take the ensemble average of the above

$$\left\langle\int \frac{d\Omega_{\hat{\mathbf{n}}}}{4\pi}\Theta_I\dot{\Theta}_I\right\rangle = \int \frac{d^3k}{(2\pi)^3}\frac{d^3k'}{(2\pi)^3}e^{i(\hat{\mathbf{k}}+\hat{\mathbf{k}}')\cdot\mathbf{x}}\sum_{\ell=0}^{\infty}\frac{2\ell+1}{(-1)^\ell}\langle\tilde{\Theta}_\ell(\mathbf{k})\dot{\tilde{\Theta}}_\ell(\mathbf{k}')\rangle P_\ell(\hat{\mathbf{k}}\cdot\hat{\mathbf{k}}').$$

Let us focus on the averaged quantity and expand the time derivative using equation (6.23) neglecting the metric perturbations

$$\begin{aligned}
\tilde{\Theta}_0(\mathbf{k})\dot{\tilde{\Theta}}_0(\mathbf{k}') &= -\frac{k}{a}\tilde{\Theta}_0(\mathbf{k})\tilde{\Theta}_1(\mathbf{k}'),\\
3\tilde{\Theta}_1(\mathbf{k})\dot{\tilde{\Theta}}_1(\mathbf{k}') &= \frac{k}{a}\tilde{\Theta}_1(\mathbf{k})\tilde{\Theta}_0(\mathbf{k}') - 2\frac{k}{a}\tilde{\Theta}_1(\mathbf{k})\tilde{\Theta}_2(\mathbf{k}') - n_e\sigma_T\tilde{\Theta}_1(\mathbf{k})\Big(3\tilde{\Theta}_1(\mathbf{k}') - \tilde{v}_b(\mathbf{k}')\Big),\\
(2\ell+1)\tilde{\Theta}_\ell(\mathbf{k})\dot{\tilde{\Theta}}_\ell(\mathbf{k}') &= \frac{\ell k}{a}\tilde{\Theta}_\ell(\mathbf{k})\tilde{\Theta}_{\ell-1}(\mathbf{k}') - \frac{\ell+1}{a}k\tilde{\Theta}_\ell(\mathbf{k})\tilde{\Theta}_{\ell+1}(\mathbf{k}')+\\
&\quad -(2\ell+1)n_e\sigma_T\tilde{\Theta}_\ell(\mathbf{k})\left(\tilde{\Theta}_\ell(\mathbf{k}') - \frac{\delta_{\ell,2}}{10}\Pi(\mathbf{k}')\right) \qquad \ell\geq 2,
\end{aligned}$$

where we recall that $\Pi \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \tilde{\Theta}_2 + \tilde{\Theta}_{P,2} + \tilde{\Theta}_{P,0}$. In the above we shall note that, when summed over ℓ all the non-scattering terms (the ones which are not multiplied by $n_e\sigma_T$) will all cancel out. Before reinserting everything back in the average note that now we have only the anisotropies and not their derivatives, thus we can multiply and divide all the anisotropy multipoles by the scalar perturbation $\mathcal{R}$, obtaining the transfer functions $\tilde{\Theta}_\ell/\mathcal{R}$, which leave in the average only the perturbations that result in the primordial power spectrum $\langle\mathcal{R}(\mathbf{k})\mathcal{R}(\mathbf{k}')\rangle \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \mathcal{P}_\mathcal{R}\delta^{(3)}(\mathbf{k}+\mathbf{k}')$[4]. The resulting Dirac delta will fix, upon integration, $\mathbf{k}' = -\mathbf{k}$, that removes the last Legendre polynomial since $P_\ell(-1) = (-1)^\ell$. From now on all the $\tilde{\Theta}$ will be transfer functions (to have simpler formulae): we will use this convention when in each integral that contains the primordial Power spectrum. In the end we are left with

$$\langle\Theta_I\dot{\Theta}_I\rangle = -n_e\sigma_T\int\frac{d^3k}{(2\pi)^3}\mathcal{P}_\mathcal{R}(\mathbf{k})\Bigg[\tilde{\Theta}_1(3\tilde{\Theta}_1 - \tilde{v}_b) + \frac{9}{2}\tilde{\Theta}_2^2 + \\ -\frac{1}{2}\tilde{\Theta}_2(\tilde{\Theta}_{P,2} + \tilde{\Theta}_{P,0}) + \sum_{\ell=3}^{\infty}(2\ell+1)\tilde{\Theta}_\ell^2\Bigg],$$

however, we should note that the above result is not gauge invariant[5]. The derivation of the heating rate by Chluba [5], from the second order Boltzmann equation shows that final result is gauge invariant and reads

$$\langle\Theta_I\dot{\Theta}_I\rangle = -n_e\sigma_T\int\frac{d^3k}{(2\pi)^3}\mathcal{P}_\mathcal{R}(\mathbf{k})\Bigg[\frac{(3\tilde{\Theta}_1 - \tilde{v}_b)^2}{3} + \frac{9}{2}\tilde{\Theta}_2^2 + \\ -\frac{1}{2}\tilde{\Theta}_2(\tilde{\Theta}_{P,2} + \tilde{\Theta}_{P,0}) + \sum_{\ell=3}^{\infty}(2\ell+1)\tilde{\Theta}_\ell^2\Bigg], \quad (7.34)$$

that from our point of view can be seen just a modification that we make to impose gauge invariance of the heating rate. The first three terms are the main sources of the dissipated energy, as the different species in the plasma are more coupled, higher multipoles becomes negligible. The first one describes mixing of blackbodies in the dipole of the radiation, resulting in a heat flow along the temperature gradient. The second term accounts for the mixing of the quadrupole of the anisotropies, which can be interpreted as the effect of a shear viscosity. The third term instead gives correction to the shear viscosity depending on the polarization of light. As already explained higher multipoles are negligible at high redshifts, considering the tight coupling approximation.

The same calculations must be done for the polarization anisotropies, however in this case it is more convenient to use Θ_P instead of Θ_Q and Θ_U. Equation (7.33) is thus modified into

$$\frac{\dot{Q}}{\rho_\gamma}\bigg|_P = \frac{d}{dt}\frac{\Delta\rho_\gamma}{\rho_\gamma}\bigg|_\text{P} = -4\langle\Theta_P\dot{\Theta}_P\rangle$$

where we used that $\Theta_P^2 = \Theta_U^2 + \Theta_Q^2$. Moving to Fourier space, expanding on Legendre polynomials and then averaging lead to the same result as before

$$\left\langle\int\frac{d\Omega_{\hat{\mathbf{n}}}}{4\pi}\Theta_P\dot{\Theta}_P\right\rangle = \int\frac{d^3k}{(2\pi)^3}\frac{d^3k'}{(2\pi)^3}e^{i(\hat{\mathbf{k}}+\hat{\mathbf{k}}')\cdot\mathbf{x}}\sum_{\ell=0}^{\infty}(-1)^\ell(2\ell+1)\langle\tilde{\Theta}_{P,\ell}(\mathbf{k})\dot{\tilde{\Theta}}_{P,\ell}(\mathbf{k}')\rangle P_\ell(\hat{\mathbf{k}}\cdot\hat{\mathbf{k}}').$$

[4] This relation holds by Fourier transform propriety $\tilde{f}^*(\mathbf{k}) = \tilde{f}(-\mathbf{k})$

[5] $\tilde{v}_b$ is not gauge invariant itself: a generic change of coordinates can change its value and thus also $\tilde{\Theta}_1$ through the Boltzmann equation. However, the heating rate must be frame independent.

Now, the equation of motion for Θ_P (6.24) yields for the averaged products

$$\tilde{\Theta}_{P,0}\dot{\tilde{\Theta}}_{P,0} = -\frac{k}{a}\tilde{\Theta}_{P,0}\tilde{\Theta}_{P,1} - n_e\sigma_T\tilde{\Theta}_{P,0}\left[\tilde{\Theta}_{P,0} - \frac{1}{2}\Pi\right]$$

$$(2\ell+1)\tilde{\Theta}_{P,\ell}\dot{\tilde{\Theta}}_{P,\ell} = \frac{\ell k}{a}\tilde{\Theta}_{P,\ell}\tilde{\Theta}_{P,\ell-1} - \frac{(\ell+1)k}{a}\tilde{\Theta}_{P,\ell}\tilde{\Theta}_{P,\ell+1} + \\ - n_e\sigma_T\tilde{\Theta}_{P,\ell}\left[(2\ell+1)\tilde{\Theta}_{P,\ell} - \frac{\delta_{\ell,2}}{2}\Pi\right] \quad \ell \geq 1,$$

where again the non-scattering terms will all cancel out each other and $\Pi \overset{\text{def}}{=} \tilde{\Theta}_2 + \tilde{\Theta}_{P,2} + \tilde{\Theta}_{P,0}$. Using the above and introducing the primordial power spectrum as before, the heating rate due to the polarization anisotropies reads 4 times

$$\langle\Theta_P\dot{\Theta}_P\rangle = -n_e\sigma_T\int\frac{d^3k}{(2\pi)^3}\mathcal{P}_{\mathcal{R}}(\mathbf{k})\left[3\tilde{\Theta}^2_{P,1} + \frac{9}{2}\tilde{\Theta}^2_{P,2} - \frac{1}{2}\tilde{\Theta}_2(\tilde{\Theta}_{P,2} + \tilde{\Theta}_{P,0}) + \right. \\ \left. + \frac{1}{2}\tilde{\Theta}_{P,0}(\tilde{\Theta}_{P,0} - \tilde{\Theta}_{P,2}) + \sum_{\ell=3}^{\infty}(2\ell+1)\tilde{\Theta}^2_{\ell}\right]. \tag{7.35}$$

Tight coupling approximation

To conclude we compute the heating rate in the tight coupling limit. This limit is particularly important since

7.3.5 Dissipation of tensor perturbations

When primordial gravitational waves reenter the Hubble horizon, as we described in section 6.3, other multipoles of the anisotropies are excited (the one associated with the spherical harmonics $Y_{\ell,\pm 2}$) and again, when the mean free path of photons starts to increase, the mixing of blackbodies can occur. However, the symmetries of tensor perturbations will influence the sourcing mechanism of the dissipation. We will now repeat the calculations of the previous section for this new case.

Again, we start by moving in Fourier space and project the anisotropies onto an appropriate basis: as we know, for tensor perturbations this is constituted by the spherical harmonics $Y_{\ell,\pm 2}$. The expansion (6.31), once inserted in the heating rate (7.32), gives

$$\Theta_I\dot{\Theta}_I = 4\pi\int\frac{d^3k}{(2\pi)^3}\frac{d^3k'}{(2\pi)^3}e^{i(\mathbf{k}+\mathbf{k}')\cdot\mathbf{x}}\sum_{\substack{\ell=0\\ \ell'=0}}^{\infty}\sum_{\substack{m=-2\\ m'=-2}}^{2}\frac{(-i)^{\ell+\ell'}\tilde{\Theta}^{(m)}_{\ell}(\mathbf{k})\dot{\tilde{\Theta}}^{(m')}_{\ell'}(\mathbf{k}')}{\sqrt{(2\ell+1)(2\ell'+1)}}Y_{\ell m}(\hat{\mathbf{p}})Y_{\ell' m'}(\hat{\mathbf{p}}).$$

Before considering the ensemble average we integrate over the solid angle to average over the direction of motion of the photons $\hat{\mathbf{p}}$. This time the integral of the spherical harmonics by their orthogonality yields

$$\int d\Omega_{\hat{\mathbf{p}}}Y_{\ell m}(\hat{\mathbf{p}})Y^*_{\ell' m'}(\hat{\mathbf{p}}) = \delta_{\ell,\ell'}\delta_{m,m'} \xrightarrow{Y^*_{\ell,m}=(-1)^m Y_{\ell,-m}} \int d\Omega_{\hat{\mathbf{p}}}Y_{\ell m}(\hat{\mathbf{p}})Y_{\ell' m'}(\hat{\mathbf{p}}) = (-1)^m\delta_{\ell,\ell'}\delta_{m,-m'}$$

that in the above gives

$$\int\frac{d\Omega_{\hat{\mathbf{p}}}}{4\pi}\Theta_I\dot{\Theta}_I = \int\frac{d^3k}{(2\pi)^3}\frac{d^3k'}{(2\pi)^3}e^{i(\mathbf{k}+\mathbf{k}')\cdot\mathbf{x}}\sum_{\ell=0}^{\infty}\sum_{m=-2}^{2}\frac{(-1)^{\ell+m}}{2\ell+1}\tilde{\Theta}^{(m)}_{\ell}(\mathbf{k})\dot{\tilde{\Theta}}^{(-m)}_{\ell}(\mathbf{k}').$$

Now we can take the ensemble average of the above and insert, as always, the primordial power spectrum by multiplying and dividing by a generic perturbation $\delta(\mathbf{k})$. As in the previous section, the average $\langle\delta(\mathbf{k})\delta(\mathbf{k}')\rangle = (2\pi)^3\mathcal{P}_\delta\delta^(3)(\mathbf{k}+\mathbf{k}')$, which fixes $\mathbf{k}' = -\mathbf{k}$, gives in our integral the function $(-1)^{\ell+m}\tilde{\Theta}_\ell^{(-m)}(-k)$, which by the proprieties of spherical harmonics is exactly $\tilde{\Theta}_\ell^{(m)}(k)$. Remember that after this step all the $\tilde{\Theta}$ are transfer functions. These calculations result in a more generic expression that holds not only for tensor perturbations but even for scalar and vector ones:

$$\left\langle \int \frac{d\Omega_{\hat{\mathbf{p}}}}{4\pi}\Theta_I\dot{\Theta}_I \right\rangle = \int \frac{d^3k}{(2\pi)^3}\sum_{\ell=0}^{\infty}\sum_{m=-2}^{2}\frac{\mathcal{P}_\delta(k)}{2\ell+1}\tilde{\Theta}_\ell^{(m)}(\mathbf{k})\dot{\tilde{\Theta}}_\ell^{(m)}(\mathbf{k}), \tag{7.36}$$

indeed, from section 6.3.1 we know that the usual multipole expansion of scalar perturbations is recovered by $\tilde{\Theta}_{\ell,m} = (2\ell+1)\tilde{\Theta}_\ell$, which in the above gives the exact result we previously obtained from Legendre polynomials.

As we know, to obtain only the contribution from the tensor perturbation we just need to consider the terms with $m = \pm 2$ from the above equation and, since we know that the dynamics of the $\pm$ multipoles is the same, assuming that also the primordial power spectrum is the same for both modes we can write

$$\left\langle \int \frac{d\Omega_{\hat{\mathbf{p}}}}{4\pi}\Theta_I\dot{\Theta}_I \right\rangle\Bigg|_{\mathrm{T}} = 2\int \frac{d^3k}{(2\pi)^3}\sum_{\ell=2}^{\infty}\frac{\mathcal{P}_h(k)}{2\ell+1}\tilde{\Theta}_\ell^{(2)}(k)\dot{\tilde{\Theta}}_\ell^{(2)}(k),$$

where the subscript h indicates that the perturbations that we are considering are the gravitational waves in the basis we introduced in section 6.3.1 following [12] and the factor 2 accounts for the 2 $\pm$ modes.
The final expression is then obtained by considering the equations of motion of the anisotropies (the transfer functions is this case[6]) (6.34) that give, for the product in the above,

$$\begin{aligned}
\frac{\tilde{\Theta}_2^{(2)}\dot{\tilde{\Theta}}_2^{(2)}}{5} &= -\frac{\sqrt{5}}{35a}k\tilde{\Theta}_2^{(2)}\tilde{\Theta}_3^{(2)} + n_e\sigma_T\frac{\tilde{\Theta}_2^{(2)}}{5}\left[\Pi^{(2)} - \tilde{\Theta}_2^{(2)}\right],\\
\frac{\tilde{\Theta}_\ell^{(2)}\dot{\tilde{\Theta}}_\ell^{(2)}}{2\ell+1} &= \frac{k}{a}\left[\frac{\sqrt{\ell^2-4}}{(2\ell-1)(2\ell+1)}\tilde{\Theta}_\ell^{(2)}\tilde{\Theta}_{\ell-1}^{(2)} - \frac{\sqrt{(\ell+1)^2-4}}{(2\ell+3)(2\ell+1)}\tilde{\Theta}_\ell^{(2)}\tilde{\Theta}_{\ell+1}^{(2)}\right] - n_e\sigma_T\frac{\tilde{\Theta}_\ell^{(2)}\tilde{\Theta}_\ell^{(2)}}{2\ell+1} \qquad \ell \geq 3,
\end{aligned}$$

where $\Pi^{(2)} \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} (\tilde{\Theta}_2^{(2)} - \sqrt{6}\tilde{E}_2^{(2)})/10$, and we neglected any metric perturbation since they don't source spectral distortions as we previously explained (this is discussed in the appendix of [7]). Putting all together, since all the non-scattering terms will cancel each other out, we find

$$\langle\Theta_I\dot{\Theta}_I\rangle = -2n_e\sigma_T\int\frac{d^3k}{(2\pi)^3}\mathcal{P}_h(k)\left[\frac{\tilde{\Theta}_2^{(2)}}{5}\left(\frac{\sqrt{6}}{10}\tilde{E}_2^{(2)} + \frac{9}{10}\tilde{\Theta}_2^{(2)}\right) + \sum_{\ell=3}^{\infty}\frac{\tilde{\Theta}_\ell^{(2)}\tilde{\Theta}_\ell^{(2)}}{2\ell+1}\right] \tag{7.37}$$

At this point we still need to compute the heating rate associated to the polarization anisotropies. To simplify the calculations with the spin weighted spherical harmonics, we will define

$$\Theta_\pm(\mathbf{x},\hat{\mathbf{p}}) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} (\Theta_Q \pm i\Theta_U)(\mathbf{x},\hat{\mathbf{p}}) = \int\frac{d^3k}{(2\pi)^3}e^{i\mathbf{k}\cdot\mathbf{x}}\sum_{\ell m}(-i)^\ell\sqrt{\frac{4\pi}{2\ell+1}}Y_{\ell m}^{\pm 2}(\hat{\mathbf{p}})(\tilde{E}_\ell^{(m)} \pm i\tilde{B}_\ell^{(m)}),$$

[6]Note that since the latter are regular anisotropies with unitary amplitude the equations of motion are the same

where we decomposed $\tilde{\Theta}^{(m)}_{\ell,\pm}$ in its real and imaginary parts $\tilde{E}^{(m)}_\ell$, $\tilde{B}^{(m)}_\ell$. The heating rate (7.33) thus reads

$$\frac{d}{dt}\frac{\Delta\rho_\gamma}{\rho_\gamma}\bigg|_{\mathrm{P}} = -4\langle\Theta_+\dot{\Theta}_- + \Theta_-\dot{\Theta}_+\rangle = -4\langle\Theta_+\dot{\Theta}^*_+ + \Theta_-\dot{\Theta}^*_-\rangle,$$

in Fourier space, this manipulation will give the right orthogonality integral for the spherical harmonics. Furthermore, we will see that all the calculations will not depend on the choice of $\pm$, hence evaluation the first term gives us also the result for the latter.

Moving to Fourier space and averaging over the solid angle gives, as in our previous calculations:

$$\int\frac{d\Omega_{\hat{\mathbf{p}}}}{4\pi}\Theta_+\dot{\Theta}^*_+ = \int\frac{d^3k}{(2\pi)^3}\frac{d^3k'}{(2\pi)^3}e^{i(\mathbf{k}-\mathbf{k}')\cdot\mathbf{x}}\sum_{\substack{\ell=0\\ \ell'=0}}^{\infty}\sum_{\substack{m=-2\\ m'=-2}}^{2}\frac{(-i)^\ell(i)^{\ell'}}{\sqrt{(2\ell+1)(2\ell'+1)}}\times$$
$$\times\,\tilde{\Theta}^{(m)}_{\ell,+}(\mathbf{k})[\dot{\tilde{\Theta}}^{(m')}_{\ell,+}(\mathbf{k}')]^*\int d\Omega_{\hat{\mathbf{p}}}Y^{+2}_{\ell m}(\hat{\mathbf{p}})Y^{*+2}_{\ell' m'}(\hat{\mathbf{p}}),$$

we are now allowed to use the orthogonality of the spin weighted spherical harmonics $\int d\Omega_{\hat{\mathbf{p}}}Y^{+2}_{\ell m}Y^{*+2}_{\ell' m'} = \delta_{\ell,\ell'}\delta_{m,m'}$. At this point we can the ensemble average and divide and multiply each $\tilde{\Theta}$ by a primordial perturbation $\delta(\mathbf{k})$ as we did before. Note that this time, having $(\tilde{\Theta}^{(m)}_{\ell,+})^*$, the primordial power spectrum will be given by $\langle\delta(\mathbf{k})\delta^*(\mathbf{k}')\rangle = (2\pi)^3\mathcal{P}_\delta\delta^{(3)}(\mathbf{k}-\mathbf{k}')$. Keeping in mind the convention for which the $\tilde{\Theta}$ are now transfer functions, we obtain

$$\left\langle\int\frac{d\Omega_{\hat{\mathbf{p}}}}{4\pi}\Theta_+\dot{\Theta}^*_+\right\rangle = \int\frac{d^3k}{(2\pi)^3}\sum_{\ell=0}^{\infty}\sum_{m=-2}^{2}\mathcal{P}_\delta(k)\frac{\tilde{\Theta}^{(m)}_{\ell,+}(k)[\dot{\tilde{\Theta}}^{(m)}_{\ell,+}(k)]^*}{2\ell+1}$$
$$= \int\frac{d^3k}{(2\pi)^3}\sum_{\ell=0}^{\infty}\sum_{m=-2}^{2}\mathcal{P}_\delta(k)\frac{\tilde{E}^{(m)}_\ell(k)\dot{\tilde{E}}^{(m)}_\ell(k) + \tilde{B}^{(m)}_\ell(k)\dot{\tilde{B}}^{(m)}_\ell(k)}{2\ell+1},$$

where we used the definition $\tilde{\Theta}^{(m)}_{\ell,\pm} \overset{\text{def}}{=} \tilde{E}^{(m)}_\ell \pm i\tilde{B}^{(m)}_\ell$ and that the transfer functions $\tilde{E}^{(m)}_\ell$ and $\tilde{B}^{(m)}_\ell$ are real by definition.
Note that the exact same calculations can be done for $\langle\Theta_-\dot{\Theta}^*_-\rangle$ and the result will be the same. This means that overall

$$\langle\Theta_Q\dot{\Theta}_Q + \Theta_U\dot{\Theta}_U\rangle = 2\int\frac{d^3k}{(2\pi)^3}\sum_{\ell=0}^{\infty}\sum_{m=-2}^{2}\mathcal{P}_\delta(k)\frac{\tilde{E}^{(m)}_\ell(k)\dot{\tilde{E}}^{(m)}_\ell(k) + \tilde{B}^{(m)}_\ell(k)\dot{\tilde{B}}^{(m)}_\ell(k)}{2\ell+1}, \quad (7.38)$$

Which again is a general expression that holds for any kind of perturbation.
For tensor perturbation we just consider the $m = \pm 2$ mode.

$$\langle\Theta_Q\dot{\Theta}_Q + \Theta_U\dot{\Theta}_U\rangle\bigg|_{\mathrm{P,T}} = 2\int\frac{d^3k}{(2\pi)^3}\sum_{\substack{\ell=2\\ m=\pm 2}}^{\infty}\mathcal{P}_h\frac{\tilde{E}^{(m)}_\ell(k)\dot{\tilde{E}}^{(m)}_\ell(k) + \tilde{B}^{(m)}_\ell(k)\dot{\tilde{B}}^{(m)}_\ell(k)}{2\ell+1},$$

Equations (6.33a) and (6.33b) give us the two time derivatives in the above: hence, neglecting as previously any metric perturbations, each term of the sum reads

$$\frac{\tilde{E}_\ell^{(\pm2)}\dot{\tilde{E}}_\ell^{(\pm2)}}{2\ell+1} = \frac{k}{a(2\ell+1)}\tilde{E}_\ell^{(\pm2)}\left[\frac{\ell^2-4}{\ell(2\ell-1)}\tilde{E}_{\ell-1}^{(\pm2)} - \frac{\pm4}{\ell(\ell+1)}\tilde{B}_\ell^{(\pm2)} - \frac{(\ell+1)^2-4}{(\ell+1)(2\ell+3)}\tilde{E}_{\ell+1}^{(\pm2)}\right] + \\ - n_e\sigma_T\tilde{E}_\ell^{(\pm2)}\left[\frac{\tilde{E}_\ell^{(\pm2)}}{(2\ell+1)} + \frac{\sqrt{6}}{5}\Pi^{(\pm2)}\delta_{\ell,2}\right],$$

$$\frac{\tilde{B}_\ell^{(\pm2)}\dot{\tilde{B}}_\ell^{(\pm2)}}{2\ell+1} = \frac{k}{a(2\ell+1)}\tilde{B}_\ell^{(\pm2)}\left[\frac{\ell^2-4}{\ell(2\ell-1)}\tilde{B}_{\ell-1}^{(\pm2)} - \frac{\pm4}{\ell(\ell+1)}\tilde{E}_\ell^{(\pm2)} + \frac{(\ell+1)^2-4}{(\ell+1)(2\ell+3)}\tilde{B}_{\ell+1}^{(\pm2)}\right] + \\ - n_e\sigma_T\frac{\tilde{B}_\ell^{(\pm2)}\tilde{B}_\ell^{(\pm2)}}{2\ell+1},$$

with $\Pi^{(\pm2)} = \frac{1}{10}\big[\tilde{\Theta}_2^{(\pm2)} - \sqrt{6}\tilde{E}_2^{(\pm2)}\big]$. Also this time, we note that all the non-scattering term will cancel-out giving as final result

$$\left\langle\Theta_Q\dot{\Theta}_U + \Theta_U\dot{\Theta}_U\right\rangle\bigg|_{\mathrm{P,T}} = -4n_e\sigma_T\int\frac{d^3k}{(2\pi)^3}\mathcal{P}_h\left[\frac{2\tilde{E}_2^{(2)}}{25}\left(\frac{\sqrt{6}}{4}\tilde{\Theta}_2^{(2)} + \tilde{E}_2^{(2)}\right) + \\ + \frac{1}{5}\left(\tilde{B}_2^{(2)}\right)^2 + \sum_{\ell=3}^{\infty}\frac{(\tilde{E}_\ell^{(2)})^2 + (\tilde{B}_\ell^{(2)})^2}{2\ell+1}\right], \tag{7.39}$$

where we summed over m dropping the $\pm$, since both polarizations evolve equally, and we recall that the subscript h indicates that we are considering the power spectrum of gravitational waves in the basis we introduced in section 6.3.1 following [12].

In the above results (7.37) and (7.39) the usual power spectrum $\mathcal{P}_T$ can be restored considering the definition of the new polarization basis (6.30)

$$\mathcal{P}_T \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \langle\tilde{h}_{ij}\tilde{h}_{ij}^*\rangle = \frac{3}{2}\langle(\tilde{h}^{(+)}\mathbf{e}_{ij}^{(+)} + \tilde{h}^{(-)}\mathbf{e}_{ij}^{(-)})(\tilde{h}^{(+)*}\mathbf{e}_{ij}^{(-)} + \tilde{h}^{(-)*}\mathbf{e}_{ij}^{(+)})\rangle$$

$$\Big\downarrow \quad \mathbf{e}_{ij}^{(\pm)}\mathbf{e}_{ij}^{(\pm)} = 0 \quad \text{and} \quad \mathbf{e}_{ij}^{(\pm)}\mathbf{e}_{ij}^{(\mp)} = 4$$

$$= 6\langle\tilde{h}^{(+)}\tilde{h}^{(+)*} + \tilde{h}^{(-)}\tilde{h}^{(-)*}\rangle = 12\mathcal{P}_h \;\Rightarrow\; \boxed{\mathcal{P}_h = \frac{\mathcal{P}_T}{12}},$$

where we used that the power spectra of both polarizations are the same $\mathcal{P}_h \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \langle\tilde{h}^{(\pm)}\tilde{h}^{(\pm)^*}\rangle$.

7.3.6 Tight coupling approximation

In the previous section we derived the heating rate generated by the dissipation of primordial gravitational wave: to compute exactly equations (7.37) and (7.39) we should in principle solve the Boltzmann hierarchy (6.34), (6.33a) and (6.33b), including also perturbations of other fluids. However, as we have discussed in section 6.4.1, at high redshift the highest multipoles become negligible as the photon plasma behaves as a fluid. In this section we will start by using the tight coupling limit as a crude approximation just to capture the main feature of the dissipation in the plasma. We recall from equation (6.35)

$$\tilde{\Theta}_2^{(\pm2)} \approx -\frac{4\dot{\tilde{h}}^{(\pm2)}}{3n_e\sigma_T},\;\; \tilde{E}_2^{(\pm2)} \approx -\frac{\sqrt{6}}{4}\tilde{\Theta}_2^{(\pm2)},\;\; \tilde{B}_2^{(\pm2)} \approx 0 \text{ and } \tilde{\Theta}_\ell^{(\pm2)}, \tilde{E}_\ell^{(\pm2)}, \tilde{B}_\ell^{(\pm2)} \approx 0 \text{ for } \ell > 2,$$

that reduce the heating rate to

$$\begin{aligned}
\frac{d}{dt}\frac{\Delta\rho_\gamma}{\rho_\gamma}\bigg|_{\mathrm{T,I}} &= 2\frac{n_e\sigma_T}{3}\int\frac{d^3k}{(2\pi)^3}\mathcal{P}_T(k)\left[\frac{\tilde{\Theta}_2^{(2)}}{5}\left(-\frac{6}{40}\tilde{\Theta}_2^{(2)}+\frac{9}{10}\tilde{\Theta}_2^{(2)}\right)\right]\\
&= 2\frac{n_e\sigma_T}{15}\int\frac{d^3k}{(2\pi)^3}\mathcal{P}_T(k)\frac{3}{4}\left(\tilde{\Theta}_2^{(2)}\right)^2 = \int\frac{d^3k}{(2\pi)^3}\mathcal{P}_T(k)\frac{8}{45n_e\sigma_T}\left(\dot{\tilde{h}}^{(2)}\right)^2,\\
\frac{d}{dt}\frac{\Delta\rho_\gamma}{\rho_\gamma}\bigg|_{\mathrm{T,P}} &= \frac{4}{3}n_e\sigma_T\int\frac{d^3k}{(2\pi)^3}\mathcal{P}_T(k)\frac{2\tilde{E}_2^{(2)}}{25}\left(\frac{\sqrt{6}}{4}\tilde{\Theta}_2^{(2)}+\tilde{E}_2^{(2)}\right)=0,
\end{aligned}$$

which shows that only the mixing of temperature anisotropies can source a spectral distortion at high redshifts. Moreover, as the heating rated depends on $\dot{\tilde{h}}$, we immediately conclude that on super Hubble horizon scale $k\tau \ll 1$ no energy injection can occur since in such regime gravitational waves. This is exactly the behavior that we expect since in order to inject energy we have to mix photon temperature anisotropies, that can be sourced only after perturbations cross back the Hubble horizon.

Dissipation in the μ-era

At this stage we related the heating rate to the transfer function $\tilde{h}$ of the tensor perturbations: we thus need to find such transfer function. For now let's only consider injections in the μ-era, namely $z > 10^4$, which corresponds to the radiation-era and when the tight approximation certainly holds. We already discussed in section 5.2.1 that free-streaming neutrinos (recall that neutrinos decouple at $T \sim 1\text{MeV}$) can produce negative feedback on gravitational waves damping them as they reenter the Hubble horizon. Similarly, quadrupolar photon temperature anisotropies at small scales counter react to gravitational waves as a friction force (section 5.2.2) that suppress the amplitude of the wave.
As we explained in section 5.2.1 Dicus and Repko obtained a numerical solution for gravitational waves in presence of free-streaming neutrinos [9], allowing us to compute (from equation (5.10))

$$\tilde{h}(k\tau) = A_k\sum_{n\ \mathrm{even}}a_n j_n(k\tau) \xrightarrow{j_n'(x)=\frac{n}{x}j_n(x)-j_{n+1}(x)} \tilde{h}'(k\tau) = A_k\sum_{n\ \mathrm{even}}a_n k\left[\frac{n}{k\tau}j_n(k\tau)-j_{n+1}(k\tau)\right],$$

where A_k is the amplitude of the mode that we set to 1 to obtain the transfer function. The functions $j_n(x)$ are the spherical Bessel functions and their coefficients are $a_0 = 1,\ a_2 = 0.243807,\ a_4 = 5.28424\times10^{-2},\ a_6 = 6.13545\times10^{-3}$, with negligible higher-n values. In section 5.2.2 we concluded that on small scales each mode amplitude is reduced by the friction factor $\exp(-\Gamma_\gamma\tau/2)$ with $\Gamma_\gamma \overset{\mathrm{def}}{=} 32\mathcal{H}(1-R_\nu)/(15n_e\sigma_T a)$ and $R_\nu \overset{\mathrm{def}}{=} \rho_\nu/(\rho_\nu+\rho_\gamma)$. Other effects should be taken into account, such as how the fraction of relativistic species decreases as the universe cools down (section 2.2.1), however we will neglect these effects since, as explained by Chluba in [7], these may affect the heating rate only for really blue power spectra up to a level of $20\% - 30\%$.
Putting everything together we find

$$\frac{d}{dt}\frac{\Delta\rho_\gamma}{\rho_\gamma}\bigg|_{\mathrm{T,I}} = \frac{8}{45a^2n_e\sigma_T}\int\frac{d^3k}{(2\pi)^3}\mathcal{P}_T(k)\left\{\sum_{n\ \mathrm{even}}a_n k\left[\frac{n}{k\tau}j_n(k\tau)-j_{n+1}(k\tau)\right]\right\}^2 e^{-\Gamma_\gamma\tau},$$

here we can further simplify this expression by noticing that in the radiation dominated universe $a \propto \tau$, hence $\mathcal{H} = (\tau)^{-1}$ and $H = \mathcal{H}/a = (a\tau)^{-1}$. Lastly, defining the transfer function $\mathcal{T}_h$[7] we have

$$\frac{d}{dt}\frac{\Delta\rho_\gamma}{\rho_\gamma}\bigg|_{\mathrm{T}} = \frac{4H^2}{45 n_e \sigma_T}\int_0^{k_{\mathrm{cut}}} \frac{k^2 dk}{2\pi^2}\mathcal{P}_T(k)\mathcal{T}_h(k\tau)e^{-\Gamma_\gamma \tau} \tag{7.40}$$
$$\mathcal{T}_h(k\tau) \stackrel{\mathrm{def}}{=} 2\left\{\sum_{n\ \mathrm{even}} a_n\Big[n j_n(k\tau) - k\tau j_{n+1}(k\tau)\Big]\right\}^2 .$$

In the above we have also introduced a cut-off k_{cut} at small scales: at large scales when know that $\dot{\tilde{h}} = 0$, instead at small scales the integrand can diverge. Indeed, considering a power spectrum of the form $\mathcal{P}_T = 2\pi^2 k^{-3}\mathcal{A}_T(k/k_0)^{n_t}$ we can appreciate how for $k \to \infty$ the integrand goes as k^{n_t-1}, which displays a logarithmic divergence for scale invariant power spectra and even stronger divergences for blue spectra. Physically, this behavior is due to two factors: first we have the scale of the end of inflation[8] $k_{\mathrm{end}} \approx 10^{24}$ Mpc^{-1}, then we find the scale at which photons start to free-stream, which corresponds to the average mean free path of photons $k_{\mathrm{free}} = n_e\sigma_T a \approx 4.5 \times 10^{-7}(1+z)^2$ Mpc^{-1}. At this last scale photons moves almost freely thus exchanging very little energy with the rest of the plasma without sourcing distortions. This can also be understood by observing that modes with $k \gg k_{\mathrm{free}}$ in the Boltzmann equation of Θ (6.29) both the collision term becomes negligible. In the μ-era ($z \approx 10^6 - 10^4$) the free-streaming scale ranges between $k_{\mathrm{free}} \approx 10^5 - 10^1$ Mpc^{-1}, by comparison spectral distortions sourced by primordial gravitational waves allow probing far smaller scales than those reached by the Silk damping counterpart, which instead dissipates more quickly all the scalar perturbations much before they can reach k_{free}.

While at the earliest times the tight coupling approximation capture very well the evolution of the anisotropies, as the mean free path of photons increases they start to stream quasi-freely, which in turn results to anisotropies less coupled to primordial gravitational waves. This behavior can be captured by imposing milder tight coupling conditions: in section 6.4.2 we showed that by removing the stationary assumption an *improved tight coupling approximation* can be obtained. Note that equations (6.36) essentially correct the tight coupling approximation introducing a new transfer function for the amplitude of each anisotropy which suppresses modes that are free-streaming. Introducing this transfer function the heating rate (7.40) now reads

$$\frac{d}{dt}\frac{\Delta\rho_\gamma}{\rho_\gamma}\bigg|_{\mathrm{T}} = \frac{4H^2}{45 n_e \sigma_T}\int_0^{\infty} \frac{k^2 dk}{2\pi^2}\mathcal{P}_T(k)\mathcal{T}_h(k\tau)\mathcal{T}_\Theta\left(\tfrac{k}{n_e\sigma_t a}\right)e^{-\Gamma_\gamma \tau}$$
$$\mathcal{T}_\Theta(\xi) \stackrel{\mathrm{def}}{=} \frac{1 + \frac{341}{36}\xi^2 + \frac{625}{324}\xi^4}{1 + \frac{142}{9}\xi^2 + \frac{1649}{82}\xi^4 + \frac{2500}{729}\xi^6},$$

where we removed the regularization cut-off since now, for $k \to \infty$, the integrand goes as $k^{n_t-1}k^{-2}$, making the integral convergent for $n_t < 2$.
We shall note that corrections also for $\tilde{E}_\ell$ and $\tilde{B}_\ell$ are given in equation (6.36): more remarkably it is predicted a non-zero B-mode transfer function. The full expression of the transfer function with these corrections is given in section 4.2.1 of [7]. An even

[7]Note that in this transfer function we included a factor 2 that physically comes the sum over the two polarizations.

[8]This scale corresponds to the smallest wavenumbers that are still inside the Hubble horizon at the end of inflation and will not influence classical scales.

more refined expression can be obtained considering also higher multipoles with the same technique that was used in section 6.4.2: again J. Chluba in [7] gives us the expression for the transfer function up to $\ell = 20$

$$\mathcal{T}_\Theta(\xi) \approx \frac{1 + 4.48\xi + 91\xi}{1 + 4.64\xi + 90.2\xi^2 + 100\xi^3 + 55\xi^4}, \tag{7.41}$$

which again displays the expected characteristics of giving the tight coupling approximation for $\xi \to 0$ while suppressing the heating rate as xi^{-2} for $xi \to \infty$ (recall $\xi \propto k$).

Dissipation in the y-era

Appendix A

Differential geometry tools

A.1 Maximally symmetric spaces

Consider $\mathbb{R}^n$, this space is highly symmetric: it is isotropic and homogeneous, or, in a simpler way, every point and every direction "look" the same.
This means that $\mathbb{R}^n$ is symmetric under every rotation and translation: in n-dimensions there are n possible translations (along the n axes) and $n\frac{n-1}{2}$ possible rotations (for each axis we can rotate it towards $n-1$ other axes and to avoid double counting $x \to y$ and $y \to x$ we divide by 2), for a total number of symmetries equals to

$$n + n\frac{n-1}{2} = n\frac{n+1}{2}.$$

An n-dimensional manifold is said to be **maximally symmetric** if it possesses the same number of symmetries of $\mathbb{R}^n$. In the differential geometry language, a symmetry is defined through isometries, that are diffeomorphisms under which the metric tensor is invariant. For each symmetry of the metric we can define a **Killing vector**, which satisfies the Killing equation

$$0 = (\pounds_{\vec{K}} g)_{\mu\nu} = \nabla_\mu K_\nu + \nabla_\nu K_\mu, \tag{A.1}$$

where $\pounds_{\vec{K}}$ is the Lie derivative along $\vec{K}$, which is the Killing vector.

We now want to show that a maximally symmetric space really possesses the maximum number of symmetries, namely the maximum number of independent[1] Killing vectors. Consider the defining equation of the Riemann tensor applied to a 1-form

$$R^\mu_{\nu\rho\sigma} K_\mu = -[\nabla_\rho, \nabla_\sigma] K_\nu, \tag{A.2}$$

this definition, combined with the algebraic Bianchi identity, ($R^\mu_{\nu\rho\sigma} + R^\mu_{\rho\sigma\nu} + R^\mu_{\sigma\nu\rho} = 0$) implies that each Killing vector must satisfy

$$\nabla_\rho\nabla_\sigma K_\nu - \nabla_\sigma\nabla_\rho K_\nu + \nabla_\sigma\nabla_\nu K_\rho - \nabla_\nu\nabla_\sigma K_\rho + \nabla_\nu\nabla_\rho K_\sigma - \nabla_\rho\nabla_\nu K_\sigma = 0.$$

[1] Linearly independent here means that $\nexists$ a set of constants c_n such that

$$\sum_n c_n K^{(n)}_\mu(P) = 0 \qquad \forall P \in \mathcal{M}.$$

This equation can be simplified by the Killing equation (A.1): using this relation we can sum pairs of terms obtaining

$$2(\nabla_\rho \nabla_\sigma K_\nu - \nabla_\sigma \nabla_\rho K_\nu - \nabla_\nu \nabla_\sigma K_\rho) = 0,$$

that using (A.2) turns out to be the following

$$R^{\mu}_{\nu\rho\sigma} K_\mu = \nabla_\nu \nabla_\sigma K_\rho. \tag{A.3}$$

This equation shows that the second covariant derivative acts on Killing vectors just as a linear application. In this way we can determine every derivative of a Killing vector in a specific point, just by knowing its value and the value of its first covariant derivative, at the same point.
If we now Taylor expand the Killing vector around a point P, we will obtain some kind of expansion that depends on the value in P of all covariant derivatives of all orders, however we showed that we can evaluate those just knowing $K_\mu(P)$ and $\nabla_\nu K_\mu(P)$. This means that we can express the Killing vector field as a combination of two functions that do not depend on the Killing vector itself or on its derivatives:

$$K_\mu(x) = A_\mu{}^\lambda(x, P) K_\lambda(P) + B_\mu{}^{\lambda\nu}(x, P) \nabla_\nu K_\lambda(P),$$

these functions depend only on x, the point P, and the metric, through the Riemann tensor. For this reason these must be the same functions for all Killing vectors:

$$K^{(n)}_\mu(x) = A_\mu{}^\lambda(x, P) K^{(n)}_\lambda(P) + B_\mu{}^{\lambda\nu}(x, P) \nabla_\nu K^{(n)}_\lambda(P). \tag{A.4}$$

The above equation tells us that a given Killing vector is determined by $K^{(n)}_\lambda(P)$, which has N possible independent values, and by $\nabla_\nu K^{(n)}_\lambda(P)$, which has $N\frac{N-1}{2}$ independent values, due to its antisymmetry (which is a consequence of the Killing equation (A.1)).
In this way we have shown that the maximum number of independent Killing vectors in an N-dimensional manifold is exactly the same number that possesses $\mathbb{R}^N$

$$N + N\frac{N-1}{2} = N\frac{N+1}{2}.$$

We want to conclude deriving the form that has the Riemann tensor in a maximally symmetric space.
In general, equation (A.3) must hold for every Killing vector, furthermore it also must be consistent with the commutator of covariant derivatives (A.2). This requirement and the fact that we have the maximum number of linearly independent Killing vectors will determine the form of $R^{\mu}_{\nu\rho\sigma}$. Consider (A.2) applied to the two indices tensor

$$[\nabla_\sigma, \nabla_\nu] \nabla_\mu K_\rho = -R^{\lambda}_{\mu\sigma\nu} \nabla_\lambda K_\rho - R^{\lambda}_{\rho\sigma\nu} \nabla_\mu K_\lambda,$$

the equation (A.3) can be used to obtain

$$\begin{aligned}
&\nabla_\sigma(R^{\lambda}_{\nu\rho\mu} K_\lambda) - \nabla_\nu(R^{\lambda}_{\sigma\rho\mu} K_\lambda) = \\
&\quad = \nabla_\sigma R^{\lambda}_{\nu\rho\mu} K_\lambda - \nabla_\nu R^{\lambda}_{\sigma\rho\mu} K_\lambda + R^{\lambda}_{\nu\rho\mu} \nabla_\sigma K_\lambda - R^{\lambda}_{\sigma\rho\mu} \nabla_\nu K_\lambda = -R^{\lambda}_{\mu\sigma\nu} \nabla_\lambda K_\rho - R^{\lambda}_{\rho\sigma\nu} \nabla_\mu K_\lambda.
\end{aligned}$$

Now, Killing equation (A.1) allows us to move the index λ to the covariant derivative in each term, then, using a bunch of Kronecker deltas we get

$$(\nabla_\sigma R^{\lambda}_{\nu\rho\mu} - \nabla_\nu R^{\lambda}_{\sigma\rho\mu}) K_\lambda = (R^{\lambda}_{\nu\rho\mu} \delta_\sigma{}^\alpha - R^{\lambda}_{\sigma\rho\mu} \delta_\nu{}^\alpha + R^{\lambda}_{\mu\sigma\nu} \delta_\rho{}^\alpha - R^{\lambda}_{\rho\sigma\nu} \delta_\mu{}^\alpha) \nabla_\lambda K_\alpha.$$

This relation must hold for every Killing vector. We have the maximum number of independent Killing vectors, thus we can generate any other Killing vector from a combination of these. The general expansion (A.4) shows that a Killing vector field that vanishes in P, while its derivatives does not, can exists, and we surely can obtain it from a linear combination of the others. The above equation holds also for this one in P only if the right-hand side vanishes too, this can happen only if the term in parentheses is symmetric in λ α (so that it vanishes when contracted with $\nabla_\lambda K_\alpha$ that is antisymmetric)

$$R^{\lambda}_{\nu\rho\mu}\delta_{\sigma}{}^{\alpha} - R^{\lambda}_{\sigma\rho\mu}\delta_{\nu}{}^{\alpha} + R^{\lambda}_{\mu\sigma\nu}\delta_{\rho}{}^{\alpha} - R^{\lambda}_{\rho\sigma\nu}\delta_{\mu}{}^{\alpha} = R^{\alpha}_{\nu\rho\mu}\delta_{\sigma}{}^{\lambda} - R^{\alpha}_{\sigma\rho\mu}\delta_{\nu}{}^{\lambda} + R^{\alpha}_{\mu\sigma\nu}\delta_{\rho}{}^{\lambda} - R^{\alpha}_{\rho\sigma\nu}\delta_{\mu}{}^{\lambda}.$$

Contracting μ and α, recalling that $R^{\mu}_{\nu\mu\rho} = R_{\nu\rho}$ and $R^{\mu}_{\mu\nu\rho} = 0$, we find

$$R^{\lambda}_{\nu\rho\sigma} - R^{\lambda}_{\sigma\rho\nu} + R^{\lambda}_{\rho\sigma\nu} - NR^{\lambda}_{\rho\sigma\nu} = -R_{\nu\rho}\delta_{\sigma}{}^{\lambda} + R_{\sigma\rho}\delta_{\nu}{}^{\lambda} - R^{\lambda}_{\rho\sigma\nu},$$

here we recognize that, from the algebraic Bianchi identity,

$$R^{\lambda}_{\sigma\rho\nu} = -R^{\lambda}_{\sigma\nu\rho} = R^{\lambda}_{\nu\rho\sigma} + R^{\lambda}_{\rho\sigma\nu},$$

which cancels two terms in the previous equation, that now reads, after having lowered one index,

$$(N-1)R_{\lambda\rho\sigma\nu} = R_{\nu\rho}g_{\sigma\lambda} - R_{\sigma\rho}g_{\nu\lambda}. \tag{A.5}$$

Notice that the above equation must be antisymmetric in λ ρ (due to the proprieties of the Riemann tensor),

$$R_{\nu\rho}g_{\sigma\lambda} - R_{\sigma\rho}g_{\nu\lambda} = -R_{\nu\lambda}g_{\sigma\rho} + R_{\sigma\lambda}g_{\nu\rho},$$

contracting λ ν, this relation becomes

$$R_{\sigma\rho} - NR_{\sigma\rho} = -Rg_{\sigma\rho} + R_{\sigma\rho}, \quad \Rightarrow \quad \boxed{R_{\sigma\rho} = \frac{R}{N}g_{\sigma\rho}}, \tag{A.6}$$

inserting this one into the (A.5) we get our final result

$$\boxed{R_{\lambda\rho\sigma\nu} = \frac{R}{N(N-1)}(g_{\nu\rho}g_{\lambda\sigma} - g_{\sigma\rho}g_{\lambda\nu})}. \tag{A.7}$$

Appendix B

Thermodynamics tools

B.1 Phase space distribution and thermodynamics observable

B.1.1 Small chemical potential approximation

In this appendix we will show how to approximate the energy and number densities for a gas of photons in the presence of a small chemical potential. The goal is to obtain corrections to

$$\rho = a_R T^4, \qquad n = b_R T^3,$$

that are obtained from the Planck distribution.

Let's start from the number density, analogous calculations will then give the result for the energy density. From the definition we have

$$\begin{aligned}
n &= \frac{g}{(2\pi)^3}\int d^3p\ \frac{1}{\exp(\frac{\nu}{k_BT}+\mu)-1} = \frac{g}{2\pi^2}\int_0^\infty dp\frac{p^2}{\exp(\frac{\nu}{k_BT}+\mu)-1} \\
&\Big\downarrow \quad p=\nu, \qquad x \overset{\text{def}}{=} \frac{\nu}{k_BT} \\
&= \frac{g}{2\pi^2}(k_BT)^3\int_0^\infty dx\frac{x^2}{\exp(x+\mu)-1} = \frac{g}{2\pi^2}(k_BT)^3\int_0^\infty dx\frac{x^2e^{-(x+\mu)}}{1-e^{-(x+\mu)}} \\
&= \frac{g}{2\pi^2}(k_BT)^3\int_0^\infty dx\ x^2e^{-(x+\mu)}\sum_{n=0}^\infty e^{-n(x+\mu)} = \frac{g}{2\pi^2}(k_BT)^3\sum_{n=0}^\infty\int_0^\infty dx\ x^2e^{-(n+1)(x+\mu)} \\
&= \frac{g}{2\pi^2}(k_BT)^3\sum_{n=0}^\infty\frac{2}{(n+1)^3}e^{-(n+1)\mu} \approx \frac{g}{2\pi^2}(k_BT)^3\sum_{n=0}^\infty 2\frac{1-(n+1)\mu}{(n+1)^3} \\
&\Big\downarrow \quad \zeta(z) \overset{\text{def}}{=} \sum_{n=1}^\infty\left(\frac{1}{n}\right)^z \qquad \text{Riemann zeta function} \\
&= \frac{g}{\pi^2}(k_BT)^3[\zeta(3)-\mu\zeta(2)] = b_RT^3\left[1-\mu\frac{\zeta(2)}{\zeta(3)}\right]
\end{aligned} \tag{B.1}$$

where in the last line we defined $b_R \overset{\text{def}}{=} \frac{g}{\pi^2}k_B^3\zeta(3)$ with $g=2$.

The same calculation can be applied to the energy density, we just need to pay attention to the extra ν factor in the integrand: ultimately this will lead to a different integral inside the series expansion, hence different points of the zeta function will appear. Again from the definition and preceding as before

$$\begin{aligned}\rho &= \frac{g}{(2\pi)^3}\int d^3p\,\frac{E}{\exp(\frac{\nu}{k_BT}+\mu)-1} = \frac{g}{2\pi^2}\int_0^\infty dp\frac{p^3}{\exp(\frac{\nu}{k_BT}+\mu)-1}\\ &= \frac{g}{2\pi^2}(k_BT)^4\sum_{n=0}^\infty\int_0^\infty dx\; x^3e^{-(n+1)(x+\mu)} = \frac{g}{2\pi^2}(k_BT)^4\sum_{n=0}^\infty\frac{6}{(n+1)^4}e^{-(n+1)\mu}\\ &\approx \frac{g}{2\pi^2}(k_BT)^4\sum_{n=0}^\infty 6\frac{1-(n+1)\mu}{(n+1)^4} = \frac{3g}{\pi^2}(k_BT)^4[\zeta(4)-\mu\zeta(3)] = a_RT^4\left[1-\mu\frac{\zeta(3)}{\zeta(4)}\right]\end{aligned} \tag{B.2}$$

where we defined $a_R \overset{\text{def}}{=} \frac{3g}{\pi^2}k_B^4\zeta(4) = \frac{\pi^2}{15}k_B^4$ with $g=2$.

B.2 Scalar perturbed Liouville operator

In this appendix we will show how to obtain the perturbed Liouville operator, at first order, for the photon phase space in the presence of scalar perturbations. Since we are interested only in first order perturbations, in the next calculations, we will always neglect higher order contributions by Taylor expanding every function of the perturbations. We will work with the perturbed metric in the conformal Newtonian gauge, which is given by

$$ds^2 = a^2(\eta)\left[-(1+2\Psi)d\tau^2 + (1-2\Phi)\delta_{ij}dx^idx^j\right].$$

The Liouville operator, defined in , reads

$$\hat{\mathbf{L}}[f] = \frac{df}{d\tau} = \frac{\partial f}{\partial\tau} + \frac{\partial f}{\partial x^i}\frac{dx^i}{d\tau} + \frac{\partial f}{\partial p}\frac{dp}{d\tau} + \frac{\partial f}{\partial\hat{p}^i}\frac{d\hat{p}^i}{d\tau},$$

where $p^i = p\,\hat{p}^i$ (with $\hat{p}^i\hat{p}^j\delta_{ij}=1$) is the local 3-momentum of the photon, and we already considered that the local energy and the 3-momentum are not independent due to the mass-shell condition. We also assume that f can also be expanded on a background, which corresponds to the black body radiation, plus a first order perturbation (see section 6.2 for more on this expansion). Note that, since the blackbody radiation is isotropic and homogeneous (it does not depend on x^i or $\hat{p}^i$) the two factors $\frac{\partial f}{\partial x^i}$ and $\frac{\partial f}{\partial \hat{p}^i}$ are only first order contributions. This observation will simplify our calculations later on since it implies that $\frac{dx^i}{d\tau}$ and $\frac{d\hat{p}^i}{d\tau}$ are needed only at order zero.

Let's spend some time discussing local energy and momentum. The local energy is defined as the energy of a photon in the local rest frame of an observer, thus for a static observer ($U^\mu = (\frac{1-\Psi}{a},0,0,0)$) it reads

$$E = -U_\mu P^\mu = a(1+2\Psi)P^0(1-\Psi) \approx aP^0(1+\Psi).$$

The local momentum defined in the same way, therefore it must satisfy the usual Minkowskian mass-shell relation $E=\sqrt{p^ip^j\delta_{ij}}$. Using the mass-shell condition for the 4-momentum of the photon $P^\mu P_\mu = 0$, we can write

$$
\begin{aligned}
&P^\mu P_\mu = -a^2(1+2\Psi)(P^0)^2 + a^2(1+2\Phi)P^iP^j\delta_{ij} = 0,\\
&\Rightarrow \quad P^0 = \sqrt{\frac{1+2\Phi}{1+2\Psi}P^iP^j\delta_{ij}} \approx (1+\Phi-\Psi)\sqrt{P^iP^j\delta_{ij}},\\
&E = \sqrt{p^ip^j\delta_{ij}} = aP^0(1+\Psi) = a(1+\Phi)\sqrt{P^iP^j\delta_{ij}}.
\end{aligned}
$$

In this way we identify $p^i = a(1+\Phi)P^i$ as the local 3-momentum. Note that it follows from $E = \sqrt{p^ip^j\delta_{ij}}$ that decomposing $p^i = p\,\hat{p}^i$ then $p = E$, as we expect in the local reference frame.

We are now ready to determine all the contribution to the Liouville operator. First, from the above discussion on the local energy and momentum, we recognize that

$$
\frac{dx^i}{d\tau} = \frac{P^i}{P^0} = \frac{(1-\Phi)p^i}{(1+\Psi)E} \approx \hat{p}^i(1-\Psi-\Phi). \tag{B.3}
$$

Then we have to evaluate

$$
\frac{dp}{d\tau} = \frac{d}{d\tau}aP^0(1+\Psi) = \mathcal{H}p + a(1+\Psi)\frac{dP^0}{d\tau} + p\Psi',
$$

therefore we need to compute $\frac{dP^0}{d\tau}$. This can be accomplished by using the geodesic equation

$$
\frac{dP^0}{d\tau} = \frac{dP^0}{d\lambda}\frac{1}{P^0} = -\frac{\Gamma^0_{\mu\nu}}{P^0}P^\mu P^\nu,
$$

in the conformal Newtonian gauge the relevant Christoffel symbols are

$$
\Gamma^0_{00} = \mathcal{H} + \Psi', \quad \Gamma^0_{0i} = \Psi_{,i}\,, \quad \Gamma^0_{ij} = \Big[\mathcal{H}(1+2\Phi-2\Psi) + \Phi'\Big]\delta_{ij}.
$$

In this way we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{dp}{d\tau} &= (\mathcal{H}+\Psi')p - a(1+\Psi)\times\\
&\qquad\times\left[(\mathcal{H}+\Psi')P^0 + P^i\Psi_{,i} + \Big(\mathcal{H}(1+2\Phi-2\Psi)+\Phi'\Big)\frac{P^iP^j\delta_{ij}}{P^0}\right]\\
&\approx \mathcal{H}p - \mathcal{H}p + \Psi'p - \Psi'p - p^i\Psi_{,i} - \mathcal{H}p - \Phi'p\\
&= -\mathcal{H}p - \Phi'p - p^i\Psi_{,i}
\end{aligned} \tag{B.4}
$$

We now have to obtain

$$
\frac{d\hat{p}^i}{d\tau} = \frac{d}{d\tau}\frac{p^i}{p} = \frac{dp^i}{d\tau}\frac{1}{p} - \frac{dp}{d\tau}\frac{p^i}{p^2},
$$

in which we can get $\frac{dp^i}{d\tau}$ by (B.4) noting

$$
\frac{dp}{d\tau} = \frac{d}{d\tau}\sqrt{p^ip^j\delta_{ij}} = \frac{p^j}{p}\frac{dp^i}{d\tau}\delta_{ij}.
$$

These two simple calculations, with equation (B.4), show that $\frac{d\hat{p}^i}{d\tau}$ has no zeroth order contributions, but only first order ones. Therefore, when multiplied by $\frac{\partial f}{\partial \hat{p}^i}$ a second order, in perturbations, term is generated, and for this reason we will neglect its contributions.

Inserting equations (B.3) and (B.4) into the Liouville operator we end up with

$$\hat{\mathbf{L}}[f] = \frac{\partial f}{\partial \tau} + \hat{p}^i \frac{\partial f}{\partial x^i} - p\left(\mathcal{H} - \frac{\partial \Phi}{\partial \tau} + \frac{\partial \Phi}{\partial x^i}\hat{p}^i\right)\frac{\partial f}{\partial p},$$

$\Big\downarrow$ moving to cosmic time $dt = a\ d\tau$,

$$\hat{\mathbf{L}}[f] = \frac{\partial f}{\partial t} + \frac{\hat{p}^i}{a}\frac{\partial f}{\partial x^i} - p\left(H - \frac{\partial \Phi}{\partial t} + \frac{\partial \Phi}{\partial x^i}\frac{\hat{p}^i}{a}\right)\frac{\partial f}{\partial p} \tag{B.5}$$

B.3 Collision term

B.4 Tensor perturbed Liouville operator

Previously, we considered how scalar perturbations of the metric (which are in general the most studied) contributes to the evolution of the phase space associated to photons. Now, we are going to follow the same steps to study instead the effects of tensor perturbations. Again keep in mind that we will only consider first order perturbations and higher contributions will be neglected.

Tensor perturbations are described by the transverse traceless tensor h_{ij}, which happens to be gauge invariant (section). At first order in perturbation theory the tensor perturbed metric thus reads

$$ds^2 = a^2(-d\tau^2 + (\delta_{ij} + h_{ij})dx^i dx^j).$$

The Liouville operator, as usual, is defined as

$$\hat{\mathbf{L}}[f] = \frac{df}{d\tau} = \frac{\partial f}{\partial \tau} + \frac{\partial f}{\partial x^i}\frac{dx^i}{d\tau} + \frac{\partial f}{\partial p}\frac{dp}{d\tau} + \frac{\partial f}{\partial \hat{p}^i}\frac{d\hat{p}^i}{d\tau},$$

where $p^i = p\, p^i$ is again the local 3-momentum, note that even though its definition (as the momentum observed by a static observer) won't change, its relation to the 4-momentum is changed due to the different metric considered. Now, indeed the local energy is

$$U^\mu = (a^{-1}, 0, 0, 0) \ \Rightarrow \ E = -U_\mu P^\mu = aP^0$$

and then requiring that $E = \sqrt{p^i p^j \delta_{ij}} = p$ we observe that the form of the local 3-momentum should be

$$P^\mu P_\mu = -a^2(P^0)^2 + a^2(\delta_{ij} + h_{ij})P^i P^j = 0 \quad \Rightarrow \quad (P^0)^2 = (\delta_{ij} + h_{ij})P^i P^j$$
$$E^2 = p_i p_j \delta_{ij} = (aP^0)^2 = a^2(\delta_{ij} + h_{ij})P^i P^j \quad \Rightarrow \quad p_i = a(\delta_{ij} + \frac{1}{2}h_{ij})P^j,$$

where we used that there is no difference between covariant e contravariant vectors for the local momentum since in the local reference frame the spatial metric is the identity.

We can now proceed and evaluate the first contribution to the Liouville operator $\frac{dx^i}{d\tau}$, keeping in mind that (as in appendix B.2) we only need order zero contributions.

$$\frac{dx^i}{d\tau} = \frac{P^i}{P^0} = \frac{p_j}{E}(\delta^{ij} - \frac{1}{2}h^{ij}) \approx \frac{p^i}{E}. \tag{B.6}$$

The second factor is instead needed up to the first order. We start by evaluating

$$\frac{dp}{d\tau} = \frac{d}{d\tau} a P^0 = \mathcal{H} p + a \frac{dP^0}{d\tau} = \mathcal{H} p - \frac{a}{P^0} \Gamma^0_{\mu\nu} P^\mu P^\nu,$$

where in the last step we used the geodesic equation. With the metric in consideration the relevant Christoffel symbols read:

$$\Gamma^0_{00} = \mathcal{H}, \qquad \Gamma^0_{0i} = 0, \qquad \Gamma^0_{ij} = \mathcal{H}(\delta_{ij} + h_{ij}) + \frac{1}{2} h'_{ij}.$$

With these, recalling that $p^2 = a^2(\delta_{ij} + h_{ij}) P^i P^j$ and that at order zero $p^\mu = a P^\mu$, we finally get

$$\frac{dp}{d\tau} = -\frac{a}{P^0} \left[\mathcal{H}(\delta_{ij} + h_{ij}) - \frac{1}{2} h'_{ij} \right] P^i P^j = -\mathcal{H} p - \frac{1}{2} h'_{ij} \hat{p}^i \hat{p}^j. \tag{B.7}$$

We are left with $\frac{d\hat{p}^i}{d\tau}$ to be evaluated, however as in appendix B.2, we can show that this gives no zeroth order contribution, generating in the Liouville operator a second order term (since $\frac{\partial f}{\partial \hat{p}^i}$ has to be of first order too since the unperturbed distribution is isotropic) that can be neglected.

Summing all up we get that the Liouville operator now reads

$$\begin{aligned} \hat{\mathbf{L}}[f] &= \frac{\partial f}{\partial \tau} + \hat{p}^i \frac{\partial f}{\partial x^i} - \frac{1}{2} \frac{\partial f}{\partial \tau} h'_{ij} \hat{p}^i \hat{p}^j \\ &\Big\downarrow \quad \text{moving to cosmic time } dt = a\, d\tau, \\ \hat{\mathbf{L}}[f] &= \frac{\partial f}{\partial t} + \frac{\hat{p}^i}{a} \frac{\partial f}{\partial x^i} - \frac{1}{2} \frac{\partial f}{\partial t} \dot{h}_{ij} \hat{p}^i \hat{p}^j. \end{aligned} \tag{B.8}$$

Bibliography

[1] Gabriella Agazie, Akash Anumarlapudi, Anne M. Archibald, Zaven Arzoumanian, Paul T. Baker, Bence Bécsy, Laura Blecha, Adam Brazier, Paul R. Brook, Sarah Burke-Spolaor, Rand Burnette, Robin Case, Maria Charisi, Shami Chatterjee, Katerina Chatziioannou, Belinda D. Cheeseboro, Siyuan Chen, Tyler Cohen, James M. Cordes, Neil J. Cornish, Fronefield Crawford, H. Thankful Cromartie, Kathryn Crowter, Curt J. Cutler, Megan E. DeCesar, Dallas DeGan, Paul B. Demorest, Heling Deng, Timothy Dolch, Brendan Drachler, Justin A. Ellis, Elizabeth C. Ferrara, William Fiore, Emmanuel Fonseca, Gabriel E. Freedman, Nate Garver-Daniels, Peter A. Gentile, Kyle A. Gersbach, Joseph Glaser, Deborah C. Good, Kayhan Gültekin, Jeffrey S. Hazboun, Sophie Hourihane, Kristina Islo, Ross J. Jennings, Aaron D. Johnson, Megan L. Jones, Andrew R. Kaiser, David L. Kaplan, Luke Zoltan Kelley, Matthew Kerr, Joey S. Key, Tonia C. Klein, Nima Laal, Michael T. Lam, William G. Lamb, T. Joseph W. Lazio, Natalia Lewandowska, Tyson B. Littenberg, Tingting Liu, Andrea Lommen, Duncan R. Lorimer, Jing Luo, Ryan S. Lynch, Chung-Pei Ma, Dustin R. Madison, Margaret A. Mattson, Alexander McEwen, James W. McKee, Maura A. McLaughlin, Natasha McMann, Bradley W. Meyers, Patrick M. Meyers, Chiara M. F. Mingarelli, Andrea Mitridate, Priyamvada Natarajan, Cherry Ng, David J. Nice, Stella Koch Ocker, Ken D. Olum, Timothy T. Pennucci, Benetge B. P. Perera, Polina Petrov, Nihan S. Pol, Henri A. Radovan, Scott M. Ransom, Paul S. Ray, Joseph D. Romano, Shashwat C. Sardesai, Ann Schmiedekamp, Carl Schmiedekamp, Kai Schmitz, Levi Schult, Brent J. Shapiro-Albert, Xavier Siemens, Joseph Simon, Magdalena S. Siwek, Ingrid H. Stairs, Daniel R. Stinebring, Kevin Stovall, Jerry P. Sun, Abhimanyu Susobhanan, Joseph K. Swiggum, Jacob Taylor, Stephen R. Taylor, Jacob E. Turner, Caner Unal, Michele Vallisneri, Rutger van Haasteren, Sarah J. Vigeland, Haley M. Wahl, Qiaohong Wang, Caitlin A. Witt, and Olivia Young. The nanograv 15 yr data set: Evidence for a gravitational-wave background. *The Astrophysical Journal Letters*, 951(1):L8, June 2023.

[2] N. D. Birrell and P. C. W. Davies. *Quantum Fields in Curved Space*. Cambridge Monographs on Mathematical Physics. Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, UK, 1982.

[3] J. R. Bond and G. Efstathiou. The statistics of cosmic background radiation fluctuations. *Monthly Notices of the Royal Astronomical Society*, 226(3):655–687, 06 1987.

[4] J. Chluba. Green's function of the cosmological thermalization problem. *Monthly Notices of the Royal Astronomical Society*, 434(1):352–357, June 2013.

[5] J. Chluba, R. Khatri, and R. A. Sunyaev. Cmb at 2 × 2 order: the dissipation of primordial acoustic waves and the observable part of the associated energy release: Acoustic damping. *Monthly Notices of the Royal Astronomical Society*, 425(2):1129–1169, August 2012.

[6] Jens Chluba. Future steps in cosmology using spectral distortions of the cosmic microwave background, 2018.

[7] Jens Chluba, Liang Dai, Daniel Grin, Mustafa A. Amin, and Marc Kamionkowski. Spectral distortions from the dissipation of tensor perturbations. *Monthly Notices of the Royal Astronomical Society*, 446(3):2871–2886, November 2014.

[8] Planck Collaboration. Planck 2018 results. vi. cosmological parameters. *Astronomy & Astrophysics*, 641:A6, 2020.

[9] Duane A. Dicus and Wayne W. Repko. Comment on damping of tensor modes in cosmology. *Phys. Rev. D*, 72:088302, 2005.

[10] Scott Dodelson and Fabian Schmidt. *Modern Cosmology*. Academic Press, 2nd edition, 2020.

[11] D. J. Fixsen, E. S. Cheng, J. M. Gales, J. C. Mather, R. A. Shafer, and E. L. Wright. The cosmic microwave background spectrum from the full cobe firas data set. *The Astrophysical Journal*, 473:576–587, 1996.

[12] Wayne Hu and Martin White. Cmb anisotropies: Total angular momentum method. *Physical Review D*, 56(2):596–615, July 1997.

[13] Edwin Hubble. A Relation between Distance and Radial Velocity among Extra-Galactic Nebulae. *Proceedings of the National Academy of Science*, 15(3):168–173, March 1929.

[14] R. Khatri, R. A. Sunyaev, and J. Chluba. Mixing of blackbodies: entropy production and dissipation of sound waves in the early universe. *Astronomy amp; Astrophysics*, 543:A136, July 2012.

[15] Matteo Lucca, Nils Schöneberg, Deanna C. Hooper, Julien Lesgourgues, and Jens Chluba. The synergy between cmb spectral distortions and anisotropies. *Journal of Cosmology and Astroparticle Physics*, 2020(02):026–026, February 2020.

[16] D. Paoletti, F. Finelli, and F. Paci. The scalar, vector and tensor contributions of a stochastic background of magnetic fields to cosmic microwave background anisotropies. *Monthly Notices of the Royal Astronomical Society*, 396(1):523–534, June 2009.

[17] Steven Weinberg. Damping of tensor modes in cosmology. *Physical Review D*, 69(2), January 2004.

[18] Y. B. Zeldovich, A. F. Illarionov, and R. A. Syunyaev. Influence of Energy Release on the Radiation Spectrum in the Hot Model of the Universe. *Zhurnal Eksperimentalnoi i Teoreticheskoi Fiziki*, 68:1217, January 1972.